

# **The Shining Star Above The Heaven**

## **Chapter 851 - 851: Thank you**

[ 1,513 words ]

After the execution, the people cheered Sir Ferix's name. They were truly satisfied with what they saw. Many had already disliked how Munez led the Barevisk family, and with his past revealed, they hated him to the core. His death truly gave them hope that under Sir Ferix, the Barevisk family could rise again.

Sir Ferix also continued with what he needed to do as patriarch. His job was not done and would not stop at this moment. There were still many things he needed to set straight before the Barevisk family could fully stabilize.

However, later that afternoon, another piece of news spread, giving everyone another shock. These past few days were truly full of surprises, filling the people with excitement. This time, the shocking news was also about Aldrian the Great, and it was about his plan to depart for the Fallen Star Cluster.

Aldrian the Great would wage war against the devils in the Fallen Star Cluster and reclaim the entire cluster!

That was something big and truly daring. The Fallen Star Cluster had already been under the devils' occupation for generations, and no one had ever been able to retake it. In fact, since the devils built their base in the Fallen Star Cluster, they had grown stronger, and even other star clusters were receiving more and more attacks from them.

They knew that if nothing was done, there was a possibility that the central star cluster might also fall into the devils' hands.

Although they knew the worst possible outcome, the disunity among the powers in the central star cluster made the effort to reclaim the Fallen Star Cluster extremely difficult, if not impossible. Added to that, the devils were truly strong. The fact that they had held that star cluster for so long was proof of it.

Hearing that Aldrian the Great wanted to reclaim it seemed too sudden, but the people began to connect it to the surprise attack by the devils not long ago.

This could be Aldrian the Great's retaliation, a retaliation that might hit the devils hard as a whole. Maybe, with Aldrian the Great's strength, he could truly accomplish what many had failed to do in the past.

This news was also confirmed by several powers across the world. They heard that it had become a hot topic in the Ancient Blue Gate World yesterday, when many powers decided to announce it to the world.

Aldrian the Great would also offer anyone who wanted to join him the chance to depart with him in a few days.

The moment the announcement spread, it caused an uproar across the world and even in other worlds. Because of that, many powers began to mobilize their troops toward the Ancient Blue Gate World.

It was truly different from the past, whenever someone declared an attack on the Fallen Star Cluster before, there had never been such spirited activity.

Forget about showing enthusiasm, the other powers had even appeared apathetic at the very prospect of reclaiming the Fallen Star Cluster.

At this moment, many people showed their interest and spirit to join Aldrian the Great in his war against the devils in the Fallen Star Cluster. In their minds, this time might be different. This time, Aldrian the Great might create another history that would be written for future generations to admire.

They wanted to be involved in this history and contribute to it. What made them confident was simply their belief in Aldrian the Great's strength and capability.

There had never been someone like him in the past, and with his appearance now, he could bring change. If they succeeded in reclaiming the Fallen Star Cluster, the glory would also be shared among them.

The sight of many interstellar vessels beginning their journey from other stars toward the Ancient Blue Gate World could be seen everywhere. Even in the Akares Star, the Valroy family could be seen joining the war. Their interstellar vessels, filled with troops, departed for the Ancient Blue Gate World.

For those who did not have transportation vessels but still wanted to join, they could board the vessels of certain guilds that had opened recruitment for the war. These guilds were also eager to join the battle with their own resources.

The situation was truly busy, filled with countless activities as everyone prepared for war.

-----

As night came, people were still talking about the upcoming war. Although preparations were still underway, many were already confident about its prospects.

The talk was all about how Aldrian the Great would lead the alliance troops and finally liberate the Fallen Star Cluster from the devils. With the Fallen Star Cluster reclaimed, the devils' threat near the central star cluster would disappear. Travel would become safer, and people could visit more places freely.

While the outside was busy and noisy with discussions and preparations for war, Sir Ferix, Madam Elysia, their daughter Ilona, and the avatar sat together around a small table. Small glasses of tea rested on the table as they seemed to enjoy a quiet tea time. Madam Elysia had already moved to the main manor, and the other avatar had returned to Sylphia's side after Aldrian sent him there.

Sir Ferix turned toward the avatar and spoke.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, if I cannot help you more. I truly wish to follow you into this war, but I don't think the family's situation is stable enough for me to leave it for months."

The avatar smiled at him.

"It's okay, Sir Ferix. You should take care of the Barevisk family first. It's more important to keep the family stable. It would not be good to leave right after taking the seat of patriarch. The entire family still needs your presence here." He then looked at Ilona.

"Besides, with Miss Ilona and her group joining the alliance troops, it's already enough to show that you support me in this war against the devils."

Sir Ferix sighed and nodded.

"Still, I truly want to join Your Majesty in this war. I thought I could do more, but in the end, I know I have to stay," he said.

The avatar took a sip of his tea before asking,

"Anyway, how about the Valroy family? Did you receive anything from them? Did they try to contact you in any way?"

Sir Ferix shook his head.

"No, there is nothing from them. As Your Majesty expected, they seem unwilling to meddle in our family's affairs. Since they gave no reaction after I executed Munez and all his minions, the Valroy family has clearly shown their stance on this matter."

The avatar nodded.

"Right. If they want to rebuild their relationship with the Barevisk family, they will have to start from zero again—through you. But I doubt they will do that, at least not anytime soon."

Sir Ferix nodded as he looked at the surface of his tea. He could see his own reflection for a moment before lifting his gaze toward the avatar.

"So, I guess Your Majesty will return to the Ancient Blue Gate World?"

The avatar nodded.

"Yes, I think my work here is done. Sir Ferix has already taken the patriarch's position, and there is no opposing force strong enough to shake your authority. You can handle the rest on your own. I don't think anything will cause you trouble again."

Hearing the answer, Sir Ferix nodded. Then, suddenly, he stood and made a deep bow toward him.

"I truly thank Your Majesty for all your help during this time. Thank you for coming to me and helping me escape my unfortunate situation. I don't know how I can repay this, but I dare to say that I will gladly assist Your Majesty if you ever need anything from me. Just say the word, and I will do my best, even if I have to sacrifice myself."

Madam Elysia and Ilona looked at Sir Ferix in surprise, but soon they also stood and bowed toward the avatar.

"Thank you for helping my family, Your Majesty. Just as my husband said, I will also do my best if Your Majesty ever needs anything from me or my family," Madam Elysia said.

"Me too, Your Majesty. Thank you for coming to us and helping our family. I swear on my name that I will dedicate my life to you if you ever need it," Ilona said.

The avatar smiled at the family and waved his hand.

"No need to say such things. I had my own reasons for helping you, so you don't have to go that far. Just do your best to develop the Barevisk family, that will be enough," he said.

Sir Ferix straightened his body, followed by the others.

"Well, I still stand by what I said. Whatever the reason Your Majesty had for helping us, it's a fact that you brought us to this point. It's something I feel I must do, so I won't change my words or my promise," he said.

Madam Elysia and Ilona also seemed to agree, remaining silent as they looked at the avatar with firm eyes. The avatar could only nod at their determination and accept their sincerity.

They then discussed other matters as they enjoyed their time together. The next day, the avatar finally returned to the Ancient Blue Gate World after Aldrian teleported him back.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 852 - 852: The Preparation for War

[ 1,507 words ]

On the next day in the Barisan Continent, busy activity filled the skies in many areas surrounding the land. Along the coast, interstellar vessels could be seen floating, blocking the beautiful view of the blue sky.

The citizens of the Aster Empire who lived near the coast had been seeing this sight since yesterday, when many interstellar vessels suddenly arrived on the continent. Their numbers were even greater than when the Barisan Continent first opened to the world.

Even the special space designated for vessels to land was already full, forcing the others to hover not far from the coast.

These interstellar vessels were not only from the other powers of the Ancient Blue Gate World but also from other stars. Various symbols on each vessel showed their organization or origin.

All of them made their way here after their leaders, most of whom were still inside the Barisan Continent, ordered them to gather.

It was predicted that this scene would continue for a few more days, as many vessels were still on their way.

-----

Inside Aldrian's palace, Aldrian sat on his throne, thinking about the ongoing war mobilization. He truly did not expect that the announcement would attract so much attention from so many people. Many decided to join, and it made him slightly push back the departure schedule.

Initially, he thought there would not be many who wanted to go with him. This was a war to reclaim a large area as wide as a star cluster, and it was an infamous fallen star cluster at that. War was not something people wished to involve themselves in, and other powers would not spend too many of their resources on a war that could weaken their strength at home.

However, that was fine for him. He did not need many to go with him anyway. He only needed a few of the strongest cultivators who truly wanted to follow him, and that would be enough. Even if no one wanted to go with him, that was also fine. He would go alone if needed.

At this moment, he was truly surprised that not only had those leaders gone all out by ordering large-scale mobilizations, but also that many people without any affiliation wanted to join him. They registered themselves with the guilds or families that had opened recruitment for the war.

For those who had affiliations but no interstellar vessels, they could join others who had them and coordinate their arrangements accordingly.

"Your Majesty, Emperor Rozwald wishes to visit and give a report."

A voice transmission suddenly came from the elder guarding the teleportation formation.

"Bring him in," Aldrian ordered.

Not long after, Emperor Rozwald entered the throne hall and gave a slight bow.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, for disturbing your time, but I came with a report on the war preparations."

Aldrian nodded.

"At ease, Emperor Rozwald. You are not disturbing me at all. And please, you don't have to be so formal. You can act more casually when it's just the two of us here."

"Well, for now I'm afraid I can't do that, Your Majesty. You are currently the leader of the alliance troops, and there is a hierarchy I must respect," Emperor Rozwald replied.

Aldrian couldn't help but sigh inwardly as he watched how Emperor Rozwald behaved before him. It was the same way his direct subordinates acted when they met him. But Emperor Rozwald was not his subordinate; he was an emperor of a great empire in this world.

Seeing Emperor Rozwald lower himself as if he were a direct underling made Aldrian feel uncomfortable. He had already told the emperor there was no need for such formal reporting and that he could manage the troops as he saw fit.

But Emperor Rozwald insisted that it was necessary. He maintained that Aldrian, as the leader who had initiated this war, needed to be informed of every development in the preparations and that every plan had to receive his approval.

Aldrian simply let Emperor Rozwald do as he wished, since what he said was also true. Even so, the emperor's attitude still made him feel uneasy.

"There are already more than two hundred interstellar vessels, and more are still on their way. We've also received messages from several powers from other stars, imploring us to wait for them before departing. Based on our calculations, we might be able to gather more than fifty million troops from various stars. The preparations should be complete by the day after tomorrow, and we can depart then," Emperor Rozwald reported.

Hearing that, Aldrian raised his eyebrows.

"That many?"

Emperor Rozwald nodded.

"Yes, Your Majesty. Besides the many powers that have seriously mobilized their troops, there are also many individuals who wish to volunteer for this war from various worlds. From what I know, many of these individuals are descendants of ancestors who came from the Fallen Star Cluster."

"Their ancestors became refugees after the devils occupied the Fallen Star Cluster and spread throughout many worlds. They might want to join because they wish to reclaim their ancestral world."

Aldrian nodded in understanding.

"With such a large number of troops, I and the other leaders from many factions have already created a detailed plan on how we can reclaim the Fallen Star Cluster and minimize the chance for the devils to escape," Emperor Rozwald added before taking out a scroll from his storage ring and presenting it to Aldrian.

Aldrian walked toward Emperor Rozwald, took the scroll, and read its contents. After a few moments, he nodded.

"This is a good plan. However, are you sure you want to attack several worlds at the same time? By splitting the troops across multiple worlds, there's a chance they could be pinched by the devils from the other worlds that aren't under attack. Moreover, we still don't know what those devils in the Fallen Star Cluster have prepared for us."

Emperor Rozwald smiled.

"That's something we've already taken into account, Your Majesty. The thing is, the devil troops that tried to launch a surprise attack on our world consisted of many of their main forces from various factions within the Fallen Star Cluster."

"After Your Majesty killed all of them, we can assume that the devils in the Fallen Star Cluster are at their weakest, having lost many of their higher-ups. Although their numbers may still be far greater than ours, we can compensate for that with the quality of our troops."

"We plan to evenly distribute our high-ranking cultivators at the pseudo-immortal stage. These cultivators will handle the majority of the enemies. No matter how many devils come, the pseudo-immortals can take care of them."

Aldrian nodded.

"Sounds good. If all of you have already decided on this plan, then let's proceed. Let's just hope those devils don't have any surprises waiting for us."

Emperor Rozwald nodded.

"Yes, Your Majesty. Then I will take my leave."

After that, Emperor Rozwald left the throne hall.

As Aldrian was about to walk back to his throne, he received another voice transmission from the Xin family's elder.

"Your Majesty, Young Master Xin wishes to meet you."

Hearing that, Aldrian raised his eyebrows. He knew that man had been in seclusion for the past month, and it seemed he had finally finished. He replied to the transmission,

"Let him in. If it's him, you don't need to ask for permission."

Not long after, Xin Haotian entered the throne hall. There was no change in his appearance, but his aura had grown stronger, and Aldrian immediately realized that he had made another breakthrough. At this moment, he had already reached the High Emperor stage!

This truly surprised him. Xin Haotian had achieved two breakthroughs within the Emperor Stage minor realms in less than four months. That kind of speed was terrifying, showing not only Xin Haotian's talent but also how perfectly his cultivation technique suited him.

Such progress was absurd, only a few could replicate it.

When Xin Haotian entered the hall, Aldrian smiled at him.

"I thought you didn't want to leave your family's secret realm and preferred a comfortable, lazy life. I haven't heard anything from you for over two months."

Xin Haotian shrugged.

"Well, if I really wanted a lazy and easy life, I'd probably stay here instead of my secret realm. It's much more comfortable here."

Aldrian smiled when he heard that. He was glad this man was still the same as ever. He often felt bored when almost everyone, even his acquaintances, seemed to distance themselves because of differences in status or hierarchy. Everyone tended to act too formal in front of him, and he needed someone like Xin Haotian who could stay casual. Someone he could consider a friend.

"Anyway, congratulations on your breakthrough. You're truly a monster to achieve two breakthroughs in such a short time," Aldrian said.

"You'd better look in the mirror. I don't want to hear that kind of praise from you. Besides, it's thanks to the resources you gave my family that I could progress this fast," Xin Haotian replied casually.

Aldrian still smiled.

"So, what brings you here? I suppose you didn't come just to greet me after your seclusion or brag about your breakthrough, did you?"

Xin Haotian fell silent for a moment, his gaze lingering on Aldrian.

After a few seconds, he finally spoke.

"Let me serve under you."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,528 words ]

Hearing Xin Haotian, Aldrian looked confused.

"What are you talking about? I suddenly got goosebumps when you said that."

Xin Haotian released a sigh. He ignored Aldrian's teasing as he continued.

"I want to serve under you. You could appoint me as one of your subordinates or whatever... you know... for example, as part of your troops or something like that," he said awkwardly.

Aldrian finally narrowed his eyes seriously.

"Are you sure? Do you realize what you're talking about? Serving under me means that you must be loyal to me and place me above your family. You might even drag your entire family under me in the future," he said seriously. "Do you understand what that means? Wait, even before that, does Patriarch Xin know about your intent?"

To serve under him meant they had to leave their past affiliations behind. This was obvious. Their loyalty would belong to him alone, and their former affiliations would have no say in it. Even if he gave them an order that might harm their former group, they would still have to carry it out. In other words, they had to be prepared to face their own families if necessary.

In Xin Haotian's case, this was even more serious. He was the young master of the Xin family—the successor to become its next patriarch. By serving under Aldrian, he would have to set aside his status and his own family, something truly daring.

Hearing Aldrian's question, Xin Haotian nodded.

"I know. I already told my father about my intent, and he just let me be. He didn't seem to see a problem with it. Instead, he supported my decision."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows. "Patriarch Xin supported your decision?"

Xin Haotian nodded in response. Aldrian sighed as he understood what that meant. By agreeing for his successor to become Aldrian's direct subordinate, Patriarch Xin was showing that he was ready to place the entire Xin family under Aldrian's authority. The Xin family would be completely under his command and loyal to the Aster family. If he gave an order, they would have no say in it.

They could only say, "Yes, Your Majesty," with all their hearts.

This was different from the past. Until now, the Xin family had acted as a "helper" to Aldrian, the Emperor. They did it voluntarily, and their status had been the same as other nobles within the empire.

Once they were fully under his authority, it would no longer be the same as the other noble families that governed their own territories. Their status would change, they would become the direct subjects of the Aster family. Although those noble families obeyed him in most cases, they were not his direct subordinates and could still maintain a certain degree of autonomy.

However, the Xin family in the future, once Xin Haotian took the position of patriarch, would have neither choice nor autonomy. Everything they did would have Aldrian's or the Aster family's interests in mind rather than their own.

Even if the Emperor of the Aster family was no longer Aldrian, the Xin family's loyalty would remain with his bloodline.

This was not something that could be done merely out of loyalty to him. To place the entire Xin family directly under him meant allowing themselves to be under the direct control of the Aster imperial family. They could not simply withdraw from their position even if Aldrian someday stepped down from the emperor's throne, that was not how it worked.

If someone tried to pull back just because Aldrian was no longer emperor, it would make the position of the imperial family's direct subordinates look like a joke, a fragile position that could be manipulated at will, without integrity.

That was why, once someone pledged their loyalty and became a direct subordinate of Aldrian, it was the same as making a lifetime pledge to the Aster family. Unless something extraordinary happened to the Aster family, they would remain its subordinates forever.

Aldrian looked at Xin Haotian for a moment, and Xin Haotian looked back at him. There was a brief silence before Aldrian spoke.

"Why would you decide something like that? Isn't it much better if you or the Xin family maintain your current status? Your family could still have some degree of freedom, but once all of you are under my direct authority—no offense, but your family would basically become troops that I could command as I please, or even expendable ones."

Xin Haotian nodded, then shrugged.

"Well, call me crazy, but I think serving under you would be much better for me. To be honest, I decided this with only myself in mind, but I know that it naturally includes my family. I don't think anyone in my family would oppose this kind of decision anyway. All of them already see you as a higher existence than the patriarch, after all."

"The point is, if I or my family serve under you, there will be no harm—only benefit."

Aldrian raised his eyebrows, then couldn't help but smirk slightly.

"What if I brought misfortune instead? What if what I did was wrong and led you, or even your family to destruction? Wouldn't you, at that time, only be able to curse me to death and regret this decision?" he said.

"Well, if that happened, then I could only blame my stupid decision to believe in you. At that time, I would curse you even in death so you could hear me. Even if I became a ghost, I'd haunt you forever," Xin Haotian replied.

Aldrian sighed again and couldn't help but smile warmly. This man's mind was truly simple and firm. He didn't hesitate to make such an important decision. Patriarch Xin was the same, which made Aldrian think that the father and son truly shared the same nature when it came to making decisions.

They seemed careless about the results of their choices, but in truth, they had already thought them through completely.

Aldrian then nodded. "Alright then. To be honest, I'm glad that you've decided to join me. At this moment, I'm in the process of building my own imperial force. It's still small, but it will grow in the future. I need someone I can trust and depend on as my sword and shield."

Aldrian looked directly into Xin Haotian's eyes. His gaze was serious, carrying not even the slightest hint of jest.

"I'll ask this only once. Are you sure you're willing to become part of my force? Are you ready to be loyal to me and my family, to obey me, and to become my sword and shield?"

Xin Haotian did not avert his eyes. He held Aldrian's gaze firmly before slightly lowering his head without hesitation.

"I'm sure, Your Majesty. I, Xin Haotian, the young master of the Xin family, will not take back my words. I sincerely wish to serve under you. If serving you means becoming your sword and shield, or that of your family, then let it be so. I will become the sharpest sword and the hardest shield for you," he said seriously, lifting his head to meet Aldrian's eyes once more, his determination clear.

Aldrian nodded and took out his sword from his storage ring—the Sword of the End. Xin Haotian's eyes reflected the most beautiful blade he had ever seen, the very sword personally wielded by Aldrian in the battle where he saved the entire continent from the Devil Gods.

As he was still admiring its beauty, Aldrian's voice reached him again.

"On your knee, Xin Haotian."

Xin Haotian instantly obeyed, taking one knee and lowering his head. Aldrian touched the tip of his sword to Xin Haotian's right shoulder.

"With this, I confer upon you, Xin Haotian, a knighthood. You shall become my knight—my sword and my shield."

He then moved the blade to Xin Haotian's left shoulder.

"You will bear the honor and the symbol of strength of the Aster Empire."

Finally, Aldrian placed the sword's tip gently upon Xin Haotian's head.

"You will give your loyalty in thought and action. Your soul no longer belongs to you alone—it shall serve the interests of the Aster Empire."

Aldrian then withdrew his sword as Xin Haotian lifted his head.

"I, Xin Haotian, will do my duty as your knight, as your sword and shield, putting the interests of the empire first. I will not bring shame to the empire or the imperial family," he said in a solemn tone.

Aldrian finally smiled. "Now you are officially a member of my family, and an integral part of my family's force. Congratulations." He then stored his sword back inside his storage ring.

Xin Haotian smiled as he stood up.

"So I heard you plan to attack a place called the Fallen Star Cluster. I heard that place has a lot of devils, and everyone is talking about it. Mind if I join the attack?"

"Of course. Your strength is needed, more strength is better. With your presence, the emperor stage devils would stand no chance."

Xin Haotian couldn't help but smirk.

"Is this praise? I've never heard you praise me like this. Do you feel touched after making me a knight of your family?"

"Do you have to break the mood?"

Xin Haotian did not answer and only smiled, but Aldrian did not care, he was smiling too.

"I'm looking forward to your actions as a knight of the Aster family," Aldrian said.

"You will see it soon."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 854 - 854: Positive Answer

[ 1,557 words ]

On the next day, as Aldrian was in his throne hall receiving some guests from another world, he received information that Princess Vaeril had come to visit him with her entourage.

Without thinking further, he let them to come in while the guests excused themselves.

The moment Princess Vaeril arrived with her entourage, Aldrian could see that the Verdyn Empire was truly not joking with their lineup. He could recognize almost all the higher-ups from the imperial faction of the past among her group. There was even Grand Duke Vreiris and his son Orlan included in the entourage.

As they approached the stairs leading to the throne, all of them bowed before Aldrian.

"We greet Your Majesty, Emperor Aldrian the Great," Princess Vaeril said.

Aldrian smiled as he stood up from his throne and approached the princess.

"At ease, Princess. I see that you intend to join me in my journey to the Fallen Star Cluster."

Princess Vaeril smiled and nodded. "Yes, Your Majesty. I have brought many troops who could aid Your Majesty in the war. Behind me are the leaders of the noble families. Under my mother's order, they will also join this war."

Aldrian looked at the leaders of the noble families. Grand Duke Vreiris slightly bowed to him.

"It is truly an honor for me to finally see with my own eyes the living legend, the hero of the Ancient Blue Gate World. The great emperor of the Aster empire, emperor Aldrian" His son also followed and bowed to Aldrian.

"This is my son, Orlan, Your Majesty." Grand Duke Vreiris said, which was followed by Orlan's greeting.

"Your Majesty."

Aldrian nodded. "I have already heard about you, Grand Duke Vreiris, a noble who has always been loyal to the imperial family. I truly admire your loyalty."

"It is my honor to be known by you, Your Majesty. But you are too flattering, as that is what I am supposed to do as a loyal subject of the empire—to not let the empire fall into chaos," Grand Duke Vreiris replied.

The other nobles also introduced themselves, and after all of them were done, Princess Vaeril spoke to Aldrian.

"I also brought a message from Mother. She sends her apologies for not being able to accompany you directly to the Fallen Star Cluster. She must stay in the empire to take care of several matters. There are issues related to the past event when we purged the opposition faction that require her attention."

Aldrian nodded. "I see. That is fine. The matters of the empire are more important after all, and I understand that. It would not be good to neglect domestic issues for the sake of others. Moreover, while more power is always welcome, it should not come at the cost of abandoning one's own responsibilities."

"Thank you, Your Majesty, for your understanding. I also brought Mother's answer regarding the Tree of Life. We have already discussed it with the others, and we finally reached a conclusion and an agreement. We accept Your Majesty's proposal and will give you the Tree of Life," Princess Vaeril said, which made Aldrian raise his eyebrows before showing a smile.

"Thank you for the positive answer, Princess." Aldrian then looked at the other nobles. "And to all the ladies and gentlemen here, I am truly glad that you agreed to my proposal. I will surely remember the Verdyn Empire's generosity in this matter."

"Oh, this is the least we can do, Your Majesty. You have already done so much for us and for the entire world. Although the Tree of Life is indeed one of our sacred trees and holds great historical value in our empire, we believe it will be much better in Your Majesty's hands. Moreover, the tree's spirit seems to be very close to Her Majesty, Empress Sylphia," Grand Duke Vreiris said.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. Yesterday, when he checked on Sylphia using his domain sense, she was still near the Tree of Life, accompanying Sylvia. Sylphia appeared to be meditating beside the tree while Sylvia slept on her lap.

That adorable spirit child seemed tired after playing and had fallen asleep on Sylphia's lap. Sylphia, however, did not seem to mind and continued cultivating. Aldrian knew that cultivating in that place was truly beneficial for her.

Moreover, if she ate the fruit of the Tree of Life while continuing her cultivation there, there was a chance she could instantly comprehend restricted laws such as life laws once she stepped into divinity. With the transformation already granted by Seralis, he knew it was only a matter of time.

With Sylvia's existence added to that, there was no way Sylphia would fail to comprehend life laws or any other laws connected to nature or Seralis. As the spirit of the Tree of Life, Sylvia could actively assist Sylphia's cultivation.

"Well then, regarding moving the Tree of Life here, I will postpone it until after I am done with the Fallen Star Cluster matter. I am not in a rush to move the tree yet," Aldrian said.

After that, they discussed the attack on the Fallen Star Cluster for another half hour before the group excused themselves. However, as they were on their way out of the palace, they saw Baek Jimin coming from the opposite direction.

Princess Vaeril knew who Baek Jimin was, and that was why the moment Baek Jimin approached them, she immediately gave a slight bow.

"Greetings, Your Majesty, Empress Baek."

The moment the others heard Princess Vaeril, they realized that the woman before them was another of Aldrian the Great's women. They then followed her lead and offered the same respect, bowing to her as well.

Baek Jimin smiled at them. She already knew about Princess Vaeril from Sylphia and Aldrian.

"Princess Vaeril, right? I have already heard about you from Aldrian and Sylphia. It's nice to finally meet you, Princess of the Verdyn Empire."

"It is truly an honor that Your Majesty has heard about me, and I feel the same, as I could finally meet Your Majesty in person," Princess Vaeril replied.

"Anyway, are you done meeting with Aldrian? I suppose this is about the attack on the Fallen Star Cluster, right?" Baek Jimin asked.

"Yes, Your Majesty. We just concluded our meeting and are returning to our place to rest. We will wait until the departure time," Princess Vaeril replied.

Baek Jimin nodded. "Alright then, please enjoy your stay, and thank you for coming and joining Aldrian in his journey to the Fallen Star Cluster. I am on my way to meet him, so please excuse me."

"Ah, yes, Your Majesty."

Baek Jimin then continued walking toward the throne hall. Princess Vaeril watched her for a moment before she and her entourage continued on their way.

'An elf and a demon cultivator—what a unique combination. Emperor Aldrian is truly remarkable to keep both of them in harmony,' Princess Vaeril thought.

In the throne hall, Baek Jimin arrived and walked toward Aldrian. When he saw her approaching, a warm smile spread across his face as he stepped forward to meet her.

Before Baek Jimin could say anything, Aldrian suddenly planted his lips on hers, leaving her stunned. However, without wasting any time, she also reciprocated his kiss. As time passed, their kiss grew deeper, and neither of them wanted to part their lips.

They used their tongues, and only after a few minutes did they finally separate. Baek Jimin's face flushed, as the kiss was so intense that it left her quite stimulated. Aldrian felt the same as he looked at her lips, which he had just made a mess of with his own lips and tongue.

There was even a bulge in his crotch from the stimulation, and he really wanted to bring Baek Jimin to bed after this.

As if knowing what was on Aldrian's mind, Baek Jimin's face grew even redder as she said to him,

"Later, it's still daytime, and there might be guests visiting again."

Aldrian did not change his smile. "They can wait. I think I have a much more important matter at this moment. There is a beast inside me that needs to be calmed down."

Baek Jimin lowered her head even more, feeling truly shy. She started to doubt whether it was a good time for her to visit Aldrian.

And just like that, a few minutes later, Aldrian had already brought her to his bedroom. What followed were her moans and screams full of ecstasy. The sound of flesh hitting flesh echoed through the room, accompanied by repeated erotic squelching sounds.

For Baek Jimin, there was no way out other than to serve the beast within Aldrian and surrender to his dominance. However, she loved it and simply let him do whatever he wanted. They exchanged the fluids of their bodies for more than three hours before the beast inside Aldrian finally calmed down.

They stayed wrapped up in each other's company, chatting affectionately and forgetting about time. Aldrian also liked spending his time like this. For him, his family was the most important.

He had his priorities.

As for any visitors? They could wait. It was just a few hours anyway.

And so, Aldrian only came out of his bedroom after a few hours.

-----

Time flew by, and the day of departure finally arrived. The Barisan Continent was truly busier than ever, with hundreds of interstellar vessels floating around the continent above the sea. The number had increased significantly compared to two days ago because many forces from other stars had already arrived.

This was the day they had been waiting for!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 855 - 855: Before Departing

[ 1,643 words ]

At this moment, there were more than five hundred interstellar vessels surrounding the Barisan Continent. The troops gathered from various places reached over fifty million.

This scene truly resembled the start of preparations for a great war, and that was exactly what these people believed. They would be the ones to initiate another great war and reclaim the fallen star cluster.

The populace of the Aster Empire, especially those living along the coastline, were in awe of the sight. At this moment, millions of troops were floating outside the vessels, forming neat lines like disciplined and well-trained troops. They had just received a message from their leader to form ranks and face the direction of the floating land.

With all of them floating steadily, their cultivation must have been at least at the emperor stage, and the sheer number alone made everyone who witnessed them tremble. If an army of this scale were to attack an entire world, perhaps even a world the size of the Ancient Blue Gate World would fall.

The leaders of each organization stood at the forefront of their respective lines of troops, looking toward the floating land in the distance. All of them were already wearing their armor, showing that they were ready to depart at any moment. Their expressions were serious, as if they were waiting for something.

As countless eyes focused on the floating land in the distance, Aldrian was at this moment standing on the vast training platform within his palace grounds. With his control over energy and laws, he created large screens across the sky of the Ancient Blue Gate World.

The moment countless people saw those screens, they knew Aldrian the Great was about to speak, so they turned their attention toward them.

One of the screens appeared in a special location near the Tree of Life. Sylphia was not cultivating at this moment, which allowed her to see the screen. Sylvia sat on her lap, and she hugged the spirit child from behind as they both watched.

The moment Sylvia saw Aldrian on the screen, her eyes sparkled, and a joyful expression appeared on her face. Her body moved with excitement, unable to stay still in Sylphia's embrace.

"Majesty... Majesty." Sylvia said, her gaze never leaving the screen. Sylphia could only sigh in resignation at the spirit child's happiness. This child was truly eager for everything related to Aldrian. She often asked about when Aldrian would return, speaking in her still-broken speech.

Although her real body, the Tree of Life, had already lived for eons, the spirit itself was still newly born, so she still needed time to adapt to her physical form. She was a quick learner, as she had already learned how to communicate, for example, by showing her intentions or expressing her feelings.

Still, Sylphia smiled as she watched the child's joy. Knowing her history from Aldrian made her want to stay by the child's side forever. She understood her eagerness and simply let her be. Her gaze returned to the screen.

Countless people across the world looked up at the sky and saw Aldrian's figure. He was wearing his red and golden robe, and his handsome face caused countless women to blush despite the serious atmosphere. His blue eyes gave the illusion that they were gazing directly into the souls of all who watched.

Even through the screen, they could feel the charisma of the great emperor, and their souls felt drawn to him. They felt an urge to listen to every word that the emperor was about to say.

Behind Aldrian stood Baek Jimin to his right and Xin Haotian to his left. Angelica stood beside Baek Jimin.

After a few moments of silence, Aldrian finally opened his mouth.

"To all cultivators and ordinary mortals who see me now, thank you for your attention. I will be brief." His voice carried to every corner of the world.

"After this, we will depart for a war in which I cannot guarantee your safety. You may lose your lives there."

"You may lose your life in a war you could otherwise avoid. If you choose not to join, nothing will happen to you. This is not a mandatory war for you, but my situation is different. I must do this for personal reasons."

"To be honest, I did not expect the participation to be this great when I announced that I wanted to reclaim the fallen star cluster. But the moment I realized that so many wished to join and still gathered here, it made me understand that I had underestimated the spirit of cultivators who are willing to face danger and wage war against the devils in the fallen star cluster."

"I know you each have your reasons for joining me in this war, and those reasons aside, you have become the strength of this joint force against the devils. I thank you for that."

"Still, I must ask everyone here whether you truly wish to continue and join me in this war. If you think this is not worth it, then you may stay behind. I will not force you, and once again, this war is not necessary for you. This war is for my own reasons. I do not want you to feel regret once we arrive in the war zone."

Aldrian's eyes swept as if he could see everyone who watched him. He knew that not all of those present had joined voluntarily, some had been dragged here by orders.

There were also powers who had come simply because others had come, they were following the tide, not truly excited for war. They did not want to appear different while many forces from other star systems sent troops to fight the devils. After all, that could be bad for their image in front of so many.

"We will not back down! We will follow Emperor Aldrian to war! Let those devils face their judgment! Give the devils hell! Let those devils meet their end! Give them hell! Give them hell! Give them hell!"

Suddenly the troops of the Aster Empire, drawn from various royal families, shouted in unison from their positions near the central region, where an interstellar vessel was already waiting to transport them.

Their voices resounded and could be heard everywhere, leaving those who heard them slightly stunned. However, one by one, the other troops from different powers joined in unison.

"Give them hell! Give them hell! Give them hell!"

Their unified roar made the very air tremble and ignited the fighting spirit of countless people across the world who heard it.

"Give them hell! Give them hell! Give them hell!"

Unconsciously, everyone had begun shouting. No one backed down. All of them displayed the spirit of war, ready to face whatever consequences awaited them.

Even those who had still been unsure, dragged into this by orders from their superiors, were moved by the atmosphere. Their spirits ignited, and they too shouted with all their strength.

The voices of tens of millions soon grew into hundreds of millions, and then into billions, as people across the world joined in.

"Yeay... yeay... yeay."

Sylvia, who saw Aldrian and heard the shouts, also cheered happily. Sylphia watched Aldrian with pride, though a trace of sadness lingered in her heart.

She could not follow him.

She had to care for Sylvia, and she knew that leaving the child alone would be dangerous, as her mind was still not fully developed.

With her lonely experience that spanned eons, Sylphia knew that if Sylvia were left alone again, no one could predict what she might do. The child possessed cultivation at peak pseudo immortal stage, and with such power, she could become a danger if left unchecked.

'Oh well, at least I have my cute Sylvia to keep me company,' she thought, looking down at the smiling child on her lap. Her arms tightened gently around Sylvia as she turned her gaze back to Aldrian.

Aldrian could hear the voices echoing across the world and nodded to himself, truly satisfied with the people's spirit. He then unsheathed his sword, the Sword of the End, and raised it high into the air.

"I hear all of your spirit and determination! Let's give them hell!"

"UWOOO!" The roar of countless people made the space itself tremble as they saw Aldrian raise his sword. At this moment, there was no one whose spirit was not lifted. Even mortals felt the urge to join the army and march to war.

After hearing the endless shouts and battle cries, Aldrian finally sheathed his sword and shouted, "Depart!" before the screens disappeared. Yet the burning spirit remained as the troops began to enter their interstellar vessels, cheered on by the people watching them.

Once the screens faded from the sky, Aldrian turned to look at Baek Jimin, Xin Haotian, and Angelica, each ready to follow him into war. Then his gaze shifted toward his parents, and Eleine who stood watching him from not far away.

He showed them a warm smile as he approached. His mother was still in the early stage of pregnancy, so her belly had yet to swell. His father had his arm wrapped around her shoulder with affection, his expression filled with pride as he looked at him.

When Aldrian reached them, he took both of their hands.

"Father, Mother."

"Be careful, son. This is your first time traveling so far from our world. We don't know what may be waiting for you out there," Aldrey said.

"If you find the situation too dangerous, you can retreat, son. Your life is what matters most," Irene added, her expression full of worry.

Aldrian nodded with a gentle smile. "I will, Father. Mother, you don't have to worry. I'll make sure to come back safely. Just stay calm and take care of my little sibling. All you need to do is wait for my return." He stroked both of their hands as he spoke.

Aldrey smiled and nodded. "Then go, and bring those devils hell."

"I will, Father," Aldrian replied firmly. Releasing their hands, he turned to Baek Jimin and the others.

"Let's go."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 856 - 856: Departing**

[ 1,475 words ]

After saying goodbye to his parents, Aldrian brought Baek Jimin, Xin Haotian, and Angelica with him as he teleported them to the area near the troops of his empire. They were gathered near the central region of the Eternal Sanctuary Forest, where a large interstellar vessel awaited them not far away.

This was the interstellar vessel that he had bought from Emperor Rozwald. The emperor had gladly sold it to him since Aldrian offered a price higher than it was supposed to be. Aldrian did not care, as he possessed immense wealth at this point and believed there would be much more to come.

When Aldrian appeared near his empire's troops, he saw many of his acquaintances. The kings and leaders of several families had also decided to accompany him on this expedition.

The troops were still in the middle of embarking onto the vessel. The total number of soldiers the Aster Empire brought reached six hundred thousand, with an average cultivation at the Duke stage.

At the current level of the Aster Empire, these troops were exceptionally strong and among the finest they had ever assembled.

With an average cultivation at the Duke stage, it showed that the average strength of the continent had been growing over the past months.

Aldrian also approached the vessel, intending to enter it. Once the kings and many troops saw him, they immediately parted to make way.

"To the brightest star and eternal light, we greet Your Majesty, the Great Emperor!" they shout in unison.

"At ease. I hope all of you take care of each other. I may not be responsible for the troops of other powers, but all of you are my people. I am responsible for your souls, and I hope that no one is missing when we finish in the Fallen Star Cluster," Aldrian said.

"Follow the orders of your superiors, follow the designated plan, and you will be safe until you return home. Is that clear?!"

"Yes, Your Majesty!" the troops answered.

Aldrian nodded and looked at his future father-in-law nearby, who had also joined this war.

"Let's go, father-in-law," he said before stepping forward. King Ladwin, who liked being called father-in-law by Aldrian, felt as if he were walking on clouds, but he knew this was the time to be serious. He looked at the troops.

"Move out!"

After more than fifteen minutes, they had finally finished embarking onto the interstellar vessel. Slowly, the giant vessel floated higher and higher. Aldrian was in the control room, where he could see the outside scenery through the screen.

The operators of the vessel were provided by Emperor Rozwald, so Aldrian did not have to recruit them himself. He would receive the vessel fully prepared, with its operators. Emperor Rozwald had personally guaranteed their trustworthiness, and Aldrian had already verified them himself.

"Raising to the upper atmosphere," said one of the operators as the vessel continued ascending.

The other vessels in the surrounding continents, seeing Aldrian's vessel begin to ascend, started to follow. They floated higher and higher as many people watching cheered at their departure. The scene was truly spectacular.

Aldrian could see his vessel approaching outer space on the screen when he suddenly received a voice transmission from Sylphia.

"Good luck, dear. Be careful."

Aldrian smiled at her words. "Wait for me. I'm sorry you have to stay behind. Is everything alright? Is Sylvia causing you trouble?"

"Not really. The only thing that overwhelmed me was when she wanted to see you. She kept asking about you, eager to meet you again. Even when she saw you just now, she was so ecstatic and happy that she couldn't stay still in my lap," Sylphia replied.

She looked down at Sylvia in her embrace, who seemed sad as the screen disappeared. The spirit child hugged her silently, as if seeking comfort.

However, suddenly her eyes widened as a voice transmission entered her mind.

"Sylvia." The moment she heard Aldrian's voice, her face lit up with joy. Her body moved happily once again, which Sylphia found amusing. She knew that Aldrian was communicating with her.

"Majesty... Majesty," the spirit child said aloud, using her lips. Aldrian could still hear her as he focused his domain sense on her location.

"Sylvia, I will come to pick you up after I've finished my business. So be a good girl until I return. Don't cause trouble for Sylphia, alright?"

Sylvia blinked a few times, then answered loudly, still not knowing how to use voice transmission.

"Yes."

"Good girl. I will give you a gift after I come back." Sylvia's expression brightened with excitement.

"Yay!" she exclaimed, hugging Sylphia even tighter, her hyperactive movements showing just how happy she was. Sylphia could only smile at her before returning her attention to Aldrian.

"I will wait for you," she said.

"I will come back." After that, only silence remained, making her sigh as she hugged Sylvia tighter. She sought comfort from the spirit child and silently prayed that nothing would go wrong with Aldrian's objective to reclaim the Fallen Star Cluster.

At this moment, Aldrian's vessel had already reached the upper atmosphere, with hundreds of interstellar ships following behind.

"Connect communications with all the vessels," Aldrian ordered one of the operators. All the vessels participating in the war were already linked, allowing them to communicate using the built-in devices.

"All connected, Your Majesty," the operator said. Aldrian nodded before speaking.

"To all the leaders, after we arrive at the Fallen Star Cluster, the moment we exit the wormhole, all of you may spread out according to the plan. You don't need to wait for my orders to do so."

"Yes, Your Majesty," came the resounding reply from many voices.

"I know this may be overly optimistic, but I hope that all of you and your troops can return home without casualties. Even if there are casualties, I hope they will be minimal. The duty of higher-level cultivators will be heavier, as you must also protect those weaker than you."

"Do not neglect the weaker, as they are an important part of the troops. They are your comrades, no matter where they come from. Is that clear?"

"Yes, Your Majesty!"

"Alright, good luck, ladies and gentlemen. Out." After that, the communication cut off. Aldrian returned his focus to the screen showing outer space, where countless stars were clearly visible.

After a few minutes, one of the operators reported:

"Preparing to use warp and enter the wormhole. Starting the countdown: 5, 4, 3, 2, 1... jump!"

Aldrian felt the effect of the warp as his body was pressed for a split second before the sensation disappeared. This was the first time he had experienced the warp capability of the interstellar vessel directly. In fact, it was the first time for everyone from the Aster Empire.

On the screen showing the outside, nothing was visible except the blurry scenery caused by the extreme speed and the wormhole.

"There is no problem; all devices are functioning properly," one of the operators reported. Aldrian nodded and stood up from his seat.

"Good work, gentlemen. Keep it up."

"Yes, Your Majesty!" the operators replied as Aldrian walked out of the control room. He headed toward his private cabin on one side of the vessel. Along the way, he passed several troops who immediately greeted him. They were exploring the vessel, as this was their first time aboard.

After a few minutes of walking, he finally arrived at his private cabin. Upon entering, he saw Baek Jimin gazing out at the scenery. The cabin had several windows, allowing the passengers to clearly see the outside.

She instantly turned her head and smiled at him before giving a sign for him to sit beside her. Aldrian obeyed and settled beside her on the long, comfortable sofa. He immediately put his arm around her waist and hugged her, inhaling her fragrance through her long white hair.

"Good work, Your Majesty," she said in a joking tone.

"Hmm," he replied, continuing to brush his nose against her head.

"How long do you think this war will last?" she asked.

Aldrian stopped brushing his nose. "Well, that depends on what those devils have in store for us. If nothing changes and everything goes according to Xarz's information, then I guess we could reclaim the entire cluster in under six months."

"If you count the difference in time, it will be almost eight months in the Ancient Blue Gate World. But that's still an estimate, we could end this war more quickly, or it might even take longer," he added.

The important thing about this war is the information. He already got Xarz information regarding the fallen star cluster and their plan were according to it so if there is nothing change then there will be no problem in their attacks.

Baek Jimin nodded. She just have to trust Aldrian.

While Aldrian enjoying his time with Baek Jimin, in other vessel, Randolph was with his father, patriarch Elliot inside of the private cabin. Randolph stand not far from his father, while his father seat enjoying his tea.

After sipping his tea, patriarch Elliot look at Randolph with smile.

"Have a seat, son."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 857 - 857: Who is He?

[ 1,578 words ]

Randolf then sat across from his father. Patriarch Elliot smiled when he saw his son. This was the first time he had met Randolph since coming out of seclusion.

The moment he read Randolph's message that the Valroy family had to join the war seriously, he did not doubt it at all and did as Randolph suggested.

After reading the recent report regarding Aldrian the Great, he had to admit that Aldrian the Great could become an existential threat to the Valroy family.

He more or less already understood why Randolph wanted to maintain a good image in front of Aldrian the Great. With such a dangerous person as their opponent, they needed to keep a good relationship and use him for their own interest. They had to continue using Aldrian the Great until the time came when they believed they could get rid of him.

"How are you, son? I see that you've been quite busy lately. When was the last time you made a move yourself? I think it's already been quite some time," Patriarch Elliot said.

"I'm good, Father, and it's also good that there's finally something that makes me move personally again. The threat is too dangerous if I keep using others. I decided to take matters into my own hands to minimize mistakes," Randolph replied.

Patriarch Elliot nodded. "So, how dangerous is Aldrian the Great compared to the opponents you've faced in the past? From your brother to the devils?"

"Aldrian the Great is the most dangerous one, Father. His strength is absurd, and I can't predict or read him at all. He's so powerful and mysterious that I don't know what he's thinking or what his intent is. However, you can feel this unsettling sense that nothing is hidden from that man. It's as if we are completely open for him to read. He is the worst kind of enemy."

Patriarch Elliot raised his eyebrows.

"Is that so? I'm suddenly intrigued and want to meet Aldrian the Great personally and converse with him. I've never heard you give such a high evaluation to anyone before."

"Well, if Father meets him, you'll feel the same way I do. The most important thing in front of him is to never show even the slightest sign of hesitation. We have to keep our masks on as tightly as possible," Randolph said.

"Oh, now you're teaching your father, huh? Quite arrogant of you."

"Well, what can I say? It's who I am," Randolph answered confidently, which made Patriarch Elliot smile.

"So, I suppose we'll have to maintain a close relationship with Aldrian the Great for a long time, huh?"

Randolf nodded. "Yes, Father. At least until he erases the devils' influence in the First Heaven, we'll maintain this relationship with him. Although I can't read his intent or understand his thoughts, from what I've heard about him and based on my own analysis, he seems to have a special hatred for the devils, to the point that once he learns they exist in an area, he will pursue them until he finds and uproots all of them completely without exception, and all in a short time."

"It could be said that he's like me when it comes to cleansing devils, but he has his own method, which seems more effective. Even with the information I've gathered from my informants, I still don't know how Aldrian the Great accomplishes it," he added.

Patriarch Elliot nodded. "I see. Do you believe he could clear the entire First Heaven of the devils? Even those from the central region of heaven?"

Randolf nodded. "Yes, Father. However, even if Aldrian the Great doesn't have enough strength to completely wipe out the devils in the central region of heaven, he can at least weaken them. When the time is right and the moment supports it, we could finally get rid of them in one sweep."

"Sounds good. Our god will surely be pleased with this development," Patriarch Elliot said.

"Yes, Father, he will surely be pleased," Randolph said, his gaze turning toward the window. "He will be really pleased."

While the father and son were discussing their own matters, back on Aldrian's interstellar vessel, inside a cabin, Angelica was sitting with Pope Claudius, who had also come for this war. Both of them were enjoying tea as they took gentle sips.

"Ah, it's been months since I last tasted the tea you brewed. I really missed this taste," Pope Claudius said after his lips left the cup. He looked at Angelica and smiled.

"After you left the church grounds, you never came back again, except for His Majesty's parents' wedding," he sighed. "I think my daughter has already forgotten about me," he said teasingly.

"No, Father, I haven't. It's just that there are many things outside and... well, I just like to spend some time exploring and doing my own things, you know," Angelica replied with a slight blush.

Pope Claudius laughed before smiling warmly. "I know, dear, I know."

He knew that she liked spending time outside to make up for the years she couldn't leave the church grounds for most of her life. She enjoyed exploring, and he allowed her to do whatever she wanted. Moreover, with Aldrian behind her, there was no danger that could befall her.

But then he noticed Angelica seemed lost in thought, staring at her cup in silence for a few seconds. Her expression clearly showed she was thinking deeply about something, which made him raise his eyebrows in curiosity before finally asking,

"What is it, dear? Do you have something in mind? It seems you've been pondering something deeply."

Angelica did not answer immediately. She kept looking at the surface of her tea, which reflected her beautiful face that could captivate many men. Her eyes clearly showed that she was thinking about something, just as Pope Claudius had said.

Pope Claudius did not press her and simply waited for her answer. He took a sip of his tea just as Angelica finally spoke.

"Father, how do you know if you like someone in a romantic way?"

Spurt!

Pope Claudius spat out his tea the moment he heard that question. His lips and chin were wet, but he didn't care as he looked at Angelica in shock. Angelica blushed at his reaction and lowered her head deeply.

Pope Claudius's gaze trembled as he looked at the woman he had raised as if she were his own daughter. That question struck him like lightning on a sunny day, shaking his heart.

This question... could it be?

Has the time finally come?

Has she finally fallen for someone?

She was already a famous figure in the past, even when she was still in her wheelchair. However, very few people had actually seen her, and because she rarely left the church grounds, she became somewhat of a mysterious figure.

The only things most people knew about her were her name and her status as the Saintess of the Heavenly Direction Church.

That was why, once her beauty appeared on screen for the first time during Aldrian's parents' wedding, many instantly idolized her. Her graceful manner and her serene, calming beauty were truly captivating to anyone, regardless of gender.

Moreover, when she became one of the center figures during Aldrian's coronation, carrying his crown herself, many men, including those from high-ranking noble families, dreamed of asking for her hand in marriage.

But all of them understood that the status of a Saintess was too sacred, which made them feel unworthy. Throughout history, there had been very few Saintesses who ever married. Indeed, there were cases where a Saintess had taken a husband, but according to the records, only those personally approved by the pope could do so.

It was even said that heaven had to show its blessing for such a marriage to happen.

The heavy responsibility and sacred worthiness made a Saintess, or in this case, Angelica—a woman who could only be admired by men, but never taken as a spouse. It was something that made many men bite their fingers in frustration.

Now that Angelica had brought up the topic of liking someone, Pope Claudius naturally thought she must have feelings for someone but was uncertain about them.

"Father..." her voice broke through his chaotic thoughts. Angelica looked at him with a flushed face. He looked at her with complicated eyes before finally asking,

"Angelica, my daughter, do you like someone?"

Angelica lowered her head again, though she still answered with uncertainty.

"I don't know. That's why I wanted to ask Father, what does it feel like to like someone? Are my feelings for that person truly romantic, or is it just admiration?"

Pope Claudius stared at her in silence for a few moments before finally sighing.

"I see. Well, when you're near that person, your heartbeat increases. You feel comfortable, and you want to stay by that person's side for a long time. It feels as if there are butterflies in your stomach. The only thing you can focus on is him."

"Oh, and you'll feel jealous when another woman approaches that person. If you feel all of that, then it's a sign that you like that person romantically."

Hearing that, Angelica's blush grew even deeper as she kept lowering her head. Seeing her like that made Pope Claudius feel as if he wanted to cry.

'Who is the bastard that made my daughter fall for him?'

After holding back his tears for a few moments, he finally asked,

"Angelica, my dear, do you have someone you like? Who is that man? Please, tell this father of yours so I can—"

"It's Young Master Aldrian," Angelica cut him off, causing the pope to slip from his seat and collapse to the floor.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,680 words ]

Fifteen days later.

During the journey toward the Fallen Star Cluster, the activities were naturally limited inside the vessel. However, with how large it was and with the many facilities provided to support both passengers and crew, no one would feel bored or lack things to do.

At this moment, Aldrian was inside one of the vessel's special rooms. No, calling it a room would be an understatement; it was a training hall, spacious and equipped with numerous training facilities.

Many devices here were designed to help cultivators maintain their fitness. There was even an area where they could spar using techniques at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage. The area was protected by a strong barrier formation, allowing cultivators to use their techniques without worrying about damaging the vessel's hull.

However, at this time, the place that was usually filled with activity was quite calm. The only people present in this vast hall were a few figures in the sparring area. Aldrian stood in the middle, surrounded by several others.

All the leaders of the major territories of the Aster Empire stood in various positions around him. Their serious expressions showed their focus and concentration on what was about to begin.

Aldrian closed his eyes, and after a few moments, he opened them before speaking.

"Start."

The moment he said that, several figures vanished from where they stood and appeared right beside him. King Durand, King Herman, and Sect Leader Ryu positioned themselves around Aldrian, each using their techniques to try to land a direct hit.

They targeted his chest, head, and feet. There was no room to escape, and their speed was truly remarkable, which was not surprising, as all three were peak emperor stage cultivators.

But in Aldrian's sight, they moved incredibly slow. Before their attacks could reach him, he blocked them effortlessly with his hands and feet. As if anticipating that reaction, the three shifted tactics and tried to lock his movements by grabbing his limbs.

From afar, Sect Master Kang dashed forward at his fastest speed, channeling his fist technique. His strike rapidly closed in on Aldrian. Not only that, but elsewhere, Sect Master Baek unleashed her illusion technique toward him. As if that were not enough, from another direction, King Ladwin fired an arrow straight at Aldrian.

Aldrian was attacked from all sides, and his position was restricted as three of them held his limbs.

However, Aldrian only smiled as he quickly moved his hand, swinging King Durand toward the incoming Sect Master Kang. He also swung his other arm, where Sect Master Ryu was holding on, using him as a shield to block the incoming arrow from King Ladwin.

Seeing that Aldrian intended to use their comrades' bodies to block the attacks, Sect Master Kang immediately canceled his technique, while King Ladwin redirected his arrow with his wind laws.

But then, Sect Master Kang continued his charge toward Aldrian, and the arrow curved back, flying toward Aldrian once more. King Ladwin was using his wind laws again to control the arrow's trajectory.

The three figures restraining Aldrian's movements did not release their grip. Instead, they tightened it even further.

Aldrian raised an eyebrow, sensing that three more figures had finally made their move. King Douwin and Venerable Karma Seeker were unleashing their techniques.

King Douwin leapt forward, swinging his giant hammer, while Venerable Karma Seeker activated his sealing art. A massive palm imbued with the symbol of "seal" surged toward Aldrian. If it struck him, he would lose all ability to use his techniques or perceive anything. Every one of his senses and his energy would be sealed.

King Raymond, who stood not far from Pope Claudius, also unleashed his lightning attack. Purple-white strands of lightning shot out from his palm, forming a long dragon-shaped current that roared toward Aldrian. The power it released was truly terrifying, almost reaching the level of a pseudo-immortal foundation stage attack.

As for Pope Claudius, he remained in place, casting support techniques on King Raymond and King Ladwin. They were responsible for long-range attacks and support, along with Sect Master Baek.

They watched as their combined attacks closed in on Aldrian, whose movements were hindered by the three people clinging to him. Sect Master Kang had already drawn back his fist, ready to strike as he stood right in front of Aldrian.

Aldrian, seeing this, thought that their strategy seemed to involve sacrificing three of their comrades to restrain his movements so their techniques could hit.

However, despite the disadvantageous situation Aldrian was in, he smiled instead. With his overwhelming strength, he rotated his body, sweeping both of his arms that were being held by two people. The powerful motion lifted them off the ground. King Herman, who was holding onto his leg, could no longer restrain him.

Aldrian stomped hard, sending King Herman flying, while the two caught in his arms were thrown toward the incoming attacks. Sect Master Ryu's body collided with the incoming fist from Sect Master Kang, causing Sect Master Kang to lose his balance and strike the floor instead. King Durand's body swept through the path of the arrow, knocking it off course and sending it toward King Douwin.

King Douwin was forced to cancel his attack and defend himself from the redirected arrow. It struck his hammer with a loud impact, pushing him back several dozen meters. As for the sealing technique from Venerable Karma Seeker, Aldrian still held King Herman's body, which was struck by it instead.

Venerable Karma Seeker tried to unleash another technique, but Aldrian hurled Sect Master Ryu's body toward him, forcing him to evade. His eyes widened when he realized Aldrian had already appeared right in front of Sect Master Baek.

Aldrian began his counterattack!

Sect Master Baek was slightly stunned by Aldrian's speed as he suddenly appeared before her. Her illusion technique seemed to have no effect at all, so she decided to switch to another attack. She stomped her feet, and a strong gust of wind shot toward Aldrian's legs. But Aldrian ignored it and simply kicked the wind apart, splitting it in two.

Sect Master Baek had no time to react, as Aldrian was already right in front of her. He swept her legs with a quick motion, making her lose balance before he gently touched her forehead.

Aldrian did not stop there. He immediately directed two fingers toward Venerable Karma Seeker, who seemed to be preparing a surprise attack. From Aldrian's fingertips, a surge of wind erupted, forming a powerful force that shot straight at him at a speed even he struggled to follow.

Venerable Karma Seeker was forced to evade and narrowly avoided the attack. The moment he regained his footing, Aldrian was already in front of King Raymond, launching his next assault. King Raymond tried to defend, but he was powerless. With just a flick of Aldrian's hand, a powerful gust struck his forehead, shattering his defense.

Aldrian did not stop as he pointed his finger at Pope Claudius, who still seemed slightly shocked, and released another wind technique. The strong wind struck the pope's body, sending him flying. Aldrian then did the same to Venerable Karma Seeker, throwing him back as well. In fact, Aldrian swept his attack in all directions to ensure that everyone was knocked away.

There was a brief moment of silence before Sect Master Kang shouted, "Damn! We almost had it—ah, I'm sorry, Your Majesty, for my words."

Aldrian smiled. "Don't mind it. Your teamwork has improved, and it feels much more natural now. Even someone at middle pseudo-immortal foundation could be trapped and killed by your combined attack, especially if Pope Claudius and Venerable Karma Seeker joins in, since they are the strongest among you"

They had been training to strengthen their coordination as a team during this journey. The purpose of this sparring was not to defeat Aldrian, but to learn how to fight together against a far stronger opponent when the time came.

They had never trained together before this journey, for obvious reasons—their past differences. Even after the unification of the territories into the Aster Empire, they had never considered training like this, as they simply did not have the time.

That was why Aldrian proposed this training: to synchronize their different fighting styles and strengthen their teamwork. In the coming war, their coordination would prove invaluable and could even keep them alive should certain circumstances arise.

"It's much better than yesterday, when none of you could restrict my movements. This time, I'm impressed by your resilience in holding my limbs to hinder me. That was the same as sacrificing your bodies for the others," Aldrian said to the three figures who had restrained him earlier.

"And the others also did their part well. This is really good progress. We'll end it here for now and continue tomorrow."

"Yes, Your Majesty," they all replied in unison before beginning to leave. Venerable Karma Seeker assisted King Herman in dispelling the sealing technique that had struck him earlier. But before they could all exit the hall—

"Your Holiness, may you stay here for a while? There is something I want to ask."

Pope Claudius suddenly received Aldrian's voice transmission, leaving him momentarily stunned. He stopped in his tracks, causing King Raymond beside him to raise an eyebrow.

"What is it, Your Holiness?" he asked.

"It's nothing. You may go ahead. I suddenly remembered something I wish to say to His Majesty," Pope Claudius replied.

King Raymond looked confused but decided not to pry into someone else's business, so he simply nodded and left.

Once the others had gone, leaving only Pope Claudius and Aldrian in the training hall, the pope turned to face him.

"Your Majesty," he greeted, to which Aldrian responded with a nod.

"My apologies for suddenly asking Your Holiness to stay, and also for the question I wish to ask."

"What is it, Your Majesty? If it's something I can answer, I will, of course, do so," Pope Claudius replied.

Aldrian nodded. "Do you have something troubling your mind, Your Holiness? All this time, I've felt that you seem to be carrying something heavy in your thoughts, and it has affected your focus. If there is a problem, and you don't mind sharing it with me, I would gladly listen. Perhaps I could help, Your Holiness."

Hearing that, Pope Claudius's heart skipped a beat.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 859 - 859: His Opinion of Her

[ 1,624 words ]

Pope Claudius's heart skipped a beat upon hearing Aldrian's question. He inwardly wanted to cry because he did not know how to answer it!

There was no way he could just say, "Well, my daughter said she likes you, and this has been weighing on my mind. Maybe you could add her to your harem? I hope you don't mind it."

He did not know how Aldrian would react after hearing that, and he did not want to make their relationship awkward.

What if Aldrian distanced himself from Angelica if he knew about it?

That would be a sad situation for her, as she already seemed to like him deeply from her stories. He did not want her to be sad, he wanted her to stay happy beside Aldrian. After hearing Angelica's story about how she felt toward Aldrian, he knew that her feelings for him ran much deeper.

Of course, he understood it well, as he had once felt that way in his long life. He was the type of person who was not too strict about whom Angelica liked romantically. As long as the man was trustworthy and could make Angelica happy, he would agree with it. After all, there had been some cases in the past where a Saintess had a romantic relationship.

However, the problem was the person Angelica was interested in. Of course, he did not doubt even a little bit about Aldrian's quality and character. He was the best man for his beloved daughter, and she would be truly happy to become his woman, even if she was not his only one.

He also did not mind if Aldrian already had other women before Angelica, because Aldrian's case was a special one. If it had been another man, he would never have allowed Angelica to enter a harem.

The only thing weighing on his mind was Aldrian's opinion about it. He knew that with Aldrian's intelligence and sharpness, sooner or later, he would likely realize how Angelica felt about him. When that time came, how Aldrian treated her would decide her happiness.

He did not want to see his daughter sad because Aldrian distanced himself from her. That was not even counting what Aldrian's other women might think about the matter. What if they did not want Angelica once they learned about her feelings? His daughter would be even sadder, and she would likely return to the church in tears.

Just imagining it already made his heart ache. But then, another thought came to his mind.

'Maybe His Majesty already knows about Angelica's feelings toward him but decided to just let her be?'

This might be possible, because there was little to nothing that could be hidden from Aldrian. But still, all of this was only an assumption inside Pope Claudius's mind.

Aldrian, who was waiting for Pope Claudius to say something, noticed that the man seemed to be deep in thought. He did not want to read his mind, as he felt that would be a bad thing to do, and in this case, unnecessary.

He patiently waited for the pope to speak, and from his silence, Aldrian could tell that Pope Claudius was weighing whether he should say it or not.

After waiting for a few seconds, he finally saw the pope sigh and sit down on the floor.

"My apologies for seeming out of focus this past week, Your Majesty. But I do have something on my mind," he said, suddenly bowing deeply.

"And once again, I apologize for what I am about to say. Please don't take offense to it."

Aldrian raised an eyebrow and sat down as well. "Of course, I'm not someone who takes offense easily, especially from Your Holiness. Please rest assured that I'm not that petty. You can tell me what has been weighing on your mind all this time without worry."

At this moment, Aldrian grew even more curious about what Pope Claudius had in mind. Why did he sound so worried?

Pope Claudius straightened his body and sighed again. He looked at Aldrian, hesitating for a moment before finally speaking.

"Well, umm... Your Majesty... uh... what do you think about Angelica? Well, as a person?"

Aldrian's expression turned confused. "What I think about Angelica? Well, I already consider her one of my closest people. After all this time, I've come to see her as part of my own group, someone who holds a special place in my heart."

Pope Claudius nodded. "I'm glad that Your Majesty thinks that way about Angelica." But then his eyes grew hesitant again, and he seemed unable to focus. He took a deep breath before finally gathering the courage to ask the question he had been holding back.

"Uhhh... Your Majesty, what do you think of Angelica as a woman?"

Aldrian's expression shifted from puzzled to thoughtful, and then something strike his mind.

"Your Holiness, are you looking for a man for Angelica? Are you trying to couple her with me?"

Pope Claudius was stunned, then scratched his head awkwardly. "Well, not exactly looking for a man, Your Majesty, but I wanted to hear your opinion about Angelica because, well, uhhh... she seems to be interested in you—something like that."

His gaze carefully watched Aldrian's expression, wanting to see how he would react. What he saw was Aldrian raising his eyebrows, as if surprised, before letting out a small sigh. Pope Claudius wondered why Aldrian sighed.

Did he find it troublesome or something?

His heart trembled at the thought that it might have offended Aldrian. He suddenly regretted bringing up the matter and was about to apologize, but then he heard Aldrian speak.

"I knew it, as I thought."

Hearing that, Pope Claudius was stunned before his eyes widened.

"Your Majesty, did you already know about Angelica's feelings toward you?"

Aldrian sighed. "Well, it's not too difficult to notice that she's interested in me romantically. The way Angelica acts in front of me has become quite obvious recently. At first, I didn't think too much about it and assumed it was only admiration. However, as time passed, I realized that Angelica's feelings run much deeper than admiration."

"I've been acting normally to avoid creating any uncomfortable situation. But still, her gaze, which holds deeper feelings, is something I've taken notice of. I know that even Sylphia and Baek Jimin would likely notice it sooner or later, or maybe they already have, but chose not to talk about it? I don't know, since we never discussed this matter."

"There's also her status, and Your Holiness's opinion regarding it. As a Saintess, she's not like Sylphia or Baek Jimin. She's someone regarded as holy by many people. I don't know what they might think if they found out that she's interested in me, a man who already has two women. I don't care about what people think of me, but I can't say the same for Angelica."

"Your Holiness must also have your own thoughts on this. As the Saintess of the church, whether she likes it or not, Angelica has to consider Your Holiness's opinion. In fact, not only yours, but also that of the entire church, what they might think of their revered Saintess having feelings for a man who already has two women."

Aldrian expected Pope Claudius to show an understanding expression, but what he saw was different. The pope looked stunned for a moment before giving a slight smile.

"So, Your Majesty doesn't see any problem with Angelica being interested in you?" he asked.

Aldrian didn't quite understand the change in the pope's expression, but he still answered.

"Of course not. I can maintain our relationship normally, even if she has feelings for me. I don't know what the future will bring, but for now, as long as nothing is wrong, I can keep it this way until something changes. Only then will I act according to the situation I'm in."

Pope Claudius nodded. "I see. That's good. At least Your Majesty didn't immediately reject the idea of Angelica having feelings for you and is even open to any possibilities. That means Angelica still has a chance."

Aldrian's eyes widened slightly as he suddenly understood the direction of Pope Claudius's words.

"Wait, Your Holiness—"

"Your Majesty, please give Angelica a chance to be with you, to accept her as one of your harem," the pope interrupted, cutting off Aldrian's words.

Aldrian let out a deep sigh. Pope Claudius had finally said it.

"Did you hear what I said, Your Holiness? Although you approve of Angelica being with me, what about the others who see her as a holy being? Even if she's interested in a man, how could she enter a harem? What about her status?"

Pope Claudius's expression did not change.

"I think Your Majesty is still underestimating your own reputation and influence among the people of the empire," he said. "Your Majesty's reputation has already reached the point where even if you make a mistake, they would see it as an act of wisdom."

"They believe that anything connected to you, or anything you do, is something that should not be criticized. To them, Your Majesty is a perfect being, and they assume that everything you do carries a hidden good intention."

"There may be backlash if Angelica were interested in another man, especially if that man already had a harem. However, this is Your Majesty we're talking about, a being many already see as flawless, a being considered by many as a god. So, I think there would be no problem with her having a relationship with Your Majesty."

"Moreover, the fact that Your Majesty allows her to stay close to you while keeping those feelings already indicates that Your Majesty is not against the possibility of adding her to your harem if needed, right? If Your Majesty truly didn't want her to have those feelings, you could have kept your distance much earlier, or done something to make her forget about them." Pope Claudius said this with a smile.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 860 - 860: As a Father**

[ 1,588 words ]

Aldrian did not answer, as what Pope Claudius said was true. He simply let Angelica stay close to him and did nothing, even though he knew that she liked him, because he felt there was no need to do anything about it.

He only followed the flow, waiting to see what kind of future events would occur between him and Angelica, along with her romantic feelings toward him.

If, in the end, their relationship remained as it was now, that would be fine.

If they became more intimate in the future, that would also be fine.

He was open to any possibilities for the future relationship that might be created between him and her.

If, from the beginning, he did not want Angelica to feel that way toward him, he could have done something to make her forget those feelings. He could have been more firm in showing the boundaries between them.

But in reality, he did not do such a thing. The question was why he opened himself up to any possibilities with Angelica? Why he let the flow of fate dictate their relationship? Why he waited to see what kind of bond they would have in the future?

Aldrian pondered, and he also realized this. He did not know why, but he just felt that he wanted to see what they would become. He did not reject the idea of Angelica becoming part of his harem. In fact, he felt quite comfortable with that prospect—him, Sylphia, Baek Jimin, and Angelica.

It was not like with other women, with whom he kept a certain distance. He had already met many beautiful women over time, but aside from admiring their beauty, he did not feel any stronger emotions. He kept those feelings within the boundaries of admiration and never let them rise into a sense of possession.

At this moment, he finally thought about why he felt that way toward Angelica. Was it because he had saved her from her unfortunate fate, which made him sentimental?

Was it because he was unconsciously attracted to her, which made him allow her to stay close to him?

'Or is there something about her that makes me feel this way? Just like Sylphia and Baek Jimin?'

If he thought about it, his harem seemed to share a kind of connection with him, even before he met them, a connection that could be traced back to his past life.

For Sylphia, from the vision he saw at that time when he slept with her for the first time, he knew that he had shared a past life with her at some point.

For Baek Jimin, she had comprehended the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture, whose origin was also closely related to his past life. He even thought that Baek Jimin might have had a relationship with him at some point in that previous life.

How about Angelica? Was she the same as them? Did she have something that was strongly connected to his past life?

Aldrian sighed, as that might be the case. Although he did not know what kind of connection they had in the past, whatever it was, it also affected the way he acted in front of her.

Pope Claudius did not disturb Aldrian, as he seemed to be deep in thought about what had just been said. In fact, he was glad that his words were true, which was shown by

how Aldrian remained silent and thoughtful. Aldrian did not refute his words at all, instead, he pondered them to himself.

He then decided to speak again.

"Your Majesty, I say this as Angelica's father, who has raised her for a long time. As Your Majesty knows, that child has lived most of her life confined by her condition in the past. She never did or felt what a woman of her age was supposed to. Her fate as a Saintess only made her a lonelier figure."

"The womanly experiences and emotions that should have been natural for her were not there. That's why, when she was finally able to walk and see for the first time, I felt truly relieved and glad that she could finally do whatever she wanted to do. I did not interfere with any of it."

"Now, she is finally showing her feelings as a normal young woman who is interested in the opposite sex. Once again, I am truly glad that she can feel what other women normally feel. I want the best for her. After all that she has been through, I just want to keep her happy and hope that all of her wishes come true."

"She can now walk and see, just as she had hoped since childhood. And now that her feelings have finally bloomed as she becomes interested in a man, I want her to experience the happiness that comes with it."

"Moreover, the one she likes is you, Your Majesty. For me, this feels right. She is worthy of having the best man as her partner, and in my eyes, Your Majesty is the best. So, to make her happy and to fulfill her wish..."

Pope Claudius suddenly prostrated before Aldrian.

"Please give her a chance and accept her into Your Majesty's harem. Please make her happy by allowing her to stay by Your Majesty's side."

There was only silence as Aldrian gazed at the prostrating Pope Claudius. Aldrian sighed, then placed his hand on the pope's shoulders and helped him rise.

"Please, Your Holiness, I feel bad seeing you do this. Just as you said, I am open to any possibilities regarding what may happen between me and Angelica. If she truly feels comfortable with me and the harem, and if Sylphia and Baek Jimin are also fine with it, then I will surely give her a special place in my heart—just like Sylphia and Baek Jimin."

Pope Claudius, upon hearing that, felt as if he could cry from joy. His daughter still had a chance, and she would likely see her other wish come true.

When he heard how she described her feelings toward Aldrian, he knew his daughter had already fallen much deeper than simple admiration or affection for a man.

He did not blame her for falling for Aldrian so quickly. Aldrian was her savior, that alone would already grant him a special place in her heart. Added to that, he was perfect in the eyes of many, which only made it natural for her to fall for him. He truly was the best man for her.

"Thank you, Your Majesty," he said with a touched expression.

Aldrian smiled and sighed. "But for now, let's just act normally. I will have to discuss this matter with Sylphia and Baek Jimin first. If they find no problem with it, then I will let her stay close to me until I am ready to accept her into my harem."

Pope Claudius nodded repeatedly. "Yes, that is already good, Your Majesty. I just hope Her Majesty Sylphia or Her Majesty Baek will approve of Angelica."

Aldrian nodded. They finally stood up and began to leave the training hall, but before they could step outside, they saw Angelica enter. She showed a beautiful smile as she walked toward them, holding two small towels in her hands.

Pope Claudius smiled warmly as she stopped in front of them.

"Your Majesty, Father," she greeted them.

"Angelica, my dear, you could have stayed here and watched us train. It would have been beneficial for you," Pope Claudius said.

"No, Father, I was afraid I might disturb your training. Besides, I would really feel bad watching Father get hit by His Majesty, just like the first time I saw it a few days ago," Angelica replied. She then handed the small towels to Pope Claudius and Aldrian, who both accepted them.

Although Aldrian did not sweat, he still took the towel. Pope Claudius raised his eyebrows at her words before smiling again, this time with a hint of teasing in his expression.

"Is that so? I thought you would cheer when His Majesty managed to hit this father of yours. You know, the handsome young—"

"Father!" Angelica shouted in embarrassment, cutting off her father's words, which made Pope Claudius laugh.

Aldrian smiled at their interaction and noticed Angelica glancing at him. She was still blushing with embarrassment, which he found amusing.

"Please don't mind Father's words, Your Majesty. He was just joking," she said.

"Of course, I know. You don't have to feel embarrassed, Angelica. But I wonder if you would cheer for me if you watched our training. I think it would be a good morale booster for me." Aldrian said, which left both Pope Claudius and Angelica stunned. They did not expect Aldrian to tease!

It was the first time he had ever teased Angelica, and neither of them was prepared for it.

"Hahaha!" Pope Claudius suddenly burst into laughter, while Angelica's face grew even redder as she became shy.

"I... I... I... Excuse me, Your Majesty," she said as she rushed outside, her father's boisterous laughter echoing behind her.

Aldrian only smiled as he watched Angelica's figure running away in embarrassment. If he intended to make her one of his harem, then the first thing to do was to become closer to her.

And for that, of course, teasing her, just like he liked to tease Sylphia and Baek Jimin. It was a kind of treatment reserved only for the special women close to him.

They left the training hall in a cheerful atmosphere. Aldrian and Pope Claudius talked about other matters as they moved on from the topic of Angelica while walking together. There were many things they could talk about, after all.

They might not have another peaceful moment like this after reaching the Fallen Star Cluster.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,452 words ]

Ten days later.

The journey to the Fallen Star Cluster went on without trouble. Normally, at this time, the people inside the vessels would be doing their daily activities as usual.

However, they were already preparing themselves with their armor and forming lines in the vast halls that each vessel had. The scene was truly busy, as they had just received an announcement from the control room that their arrival time was near.

The moment they heard it, they immediately left everything they were doing and began preparing for the coming war.

After they finished getting ready, they lined up in an orderly manner in the large hall, waiting for the time to disembark.

Aldrian was also ready, standing in the control room with Baek Jimin, Angelica, and Xin Haotian. After a few moments, one of the operators reported,

"We will leave the wormhole in five, four, three, two, one."

A split second later, Aldrian felt the sudden deceleration, pushing him slightly forward. The screens showing the outside scenery now displayed the dark space, distant stars, and planets.

One by one, the alliance vessels started appearing as they exited the wormhole until all of them had emerged. The once lonely space suddenly became filled with hundreds of vessels.

After leaving the wormhole, many of the vessels began taking different paths. They were divided into large groups, and each already had its assigned destination, the worlds they were to attack.

For the devils in this star cluster, it was a surprise attack. They never expected to face an invasion from the central star cluster. There were no sentries patrolling this space, since most of them had followed Rulleus's lead to attack the central star cluster.

Although the devils here might be confused by the lack of information coming from the surprise attack in the central star cluster, they would never expect to face a counterattack.

"Good luck, ladies and gentlemen. May you succeed." Aldrian's voice resounded inside the control rooms of all vessels. After that, some vessels vanished as they activated their booster speed, propelling them forward at incredible velocity. To an ordinary mortal, an interstellar vessel using boosters would appear only as a flash of something massive crossing the void.

Aldrian watched the outside space from the screen and looked at the nearest world to them. The nearest world was quite large, though not as big as the Ancient Blue Gate World. It was one of the habitable worlds in this star cluster and one of the targets to be attacked.

However, this particular world was not for him or the troops from the Ancient Blue Gate World to attack. He shifted his gaze to another world that could still be seen from the vessel's current position. It was a red planet that looked no larger than an apple because of the distance.

"Activating booster in three, two, one," one of the operators said before the vessel accelerated again for a few minutes, then gradually decelerated.

When they slowed down, the scenery outside had already changed. The red giant world now filled the view ahead. This was the main world of the Fallen Star Cluster—the Red Mist Star. Its size was equal to that of the Ancient Blue Gate World.

This was the world assigned to the Ancient Blue Gate World's forces. It was the strongest world in the cluster, as it housed the central command of all devils within this star cluster.

There were dozens of vessels from other powers of the Ancient Blue Gate World that followed Aldrian's vessel. The moment they arrived, they spread out to various positions outside the world's atmosphere. They were preparing to surround the world and attack it from multiple directions once Aldrian gave the signal.

Looking at the massive world before them, many hearts trembled. Normally, they would never think they could attack this famous world. This was the world where the leader of the devils in this cluster resided, and there were many things that could easily kill them.

But that same leader had already surrendered and fallen into the hands of Aldrian the Great.

Aldrian was still watching the Red Mist Star on the screen when Xarz was brought into the control room by two guards. He was chained, and his cultivation had been sealed. He was treated as a prisoner, as he should have been all along. There was a prison area inside the vessel, and that was where he had stayed throughout the journey.

He was brought along because of his valuable information. Since his surrender, he had cooperated with Aldrian, providing important details about the Fallen Star Cluster that had not been known before. Because of that, Xarz was still alive, and Aldrian had not made things difficult for him.

Xarz gazed at Aldrian for a moment before looking at the screens showing the Red Mist Star. He knew that the time had come. He would watch the place that had been his "home" for years be destroyed.

However, there was no emotion in his gaze. In fact, he did not feel anything at this moment. He knew that the devils had occupied this world, they were the invaders.

He did not care if Aldrian attacked this world and killed all the devils on it. He simply felt no attachment to this place. The only thing that mattered to him was that he was still alive, nothing more.

"Where is your place? Can you see your region from here?" Aldrian suddenly asked. Most of the planet's surface was slightly obscured by the red mist. The mist was a natural phenomenon on this world, caused by the concentrated negative energy.

That mist, saturated with negative energy, was dangerous for anyone other than devil cultivators to enter. Without proper measures to block its effects, even someone at the pseudo-immortal foundation stage would lose their mind under its influence.

Xarz continued looking at the screen. "You can see it, on the west side from our position. Move a kilometer to the west."

Aldrian then gave his order. "Move a kilometre to the west side."

"Move a kilometre to the west side," one of the operators repeated before the vessel moved according to the order.

After the vessel stopped, Xarz pointed at the screen.

"That is the place where I lived in this world. There is a giant city from the past that functioned as our headquarters."

Aldrian looked at the screen for a moment.

"Are there any people other than devil cultivators there? Any innocents in this region, whatsoever?" he asked.

"There is no one, only devil cultivators at this moment. We usually kidnapped many people from the smaller worlds to bring here as supplies. There are many devils that need to cultivate, after all."

"However, all of them were already dead before we departed for the surprise attack on the central star cluster. Initially, we planned to use the Ancient Blue Gate World as a place to resupply, but... well..." Xarz answered.

The others who heard this felt fury in their hearts. These devils truly did not regard any other cultivators as anything other than objects to use however they pleased. They could use them to raise their own cultivation or as tools to satisfy the deranged desires of their character.

After hearing the answer, Aldrian instantly stood up.

"Open the hatch to the outside," he ordered.

"Yes, Your Majesty," answered one of the operators. Aldrian then walked out of the control room toward one side of the vessel. Once he arrived, a large hatch was already open, and he immediately floated outside into the void of space.

Baek Jimin, Angelica, and Xin Haotian remained inside the control room, and from one of the screens, they could see Aldrian exit the vessel and float toward its front.

From the other vessels that followed, figures began emerging one by one. Many cruisers and troops floated toward him, while others spread out in multiple directions.

Emperor Rozwald, his son, and a few figures from the Orian Continent were among those approaching Aldrian.

Aldrian stopped right in front of his interstellar vessel and observed the massive world before him for a few seconds. He then closed his eyes briefly before opening them again. His domain here had already been created.

Emperor Rozwald and the others finally arrived near Aldrian. Without looking at them, Aldrian spoke,

"Get ready. I will give the signal."

The others solemnly nodded and spread the information that the signal will be shown shortly to other alliance troops. After the message spread, something suddenly manifested in front of Aldrian.

It was just a small rock.

Those who saw it were confused, wondering what Aldrian intended to do with a single rock. But then their confusion vanished as many more began appearing, spreading before Aldrian, right outside the atmosphere of the Red Mist Star.

The rocks quickly grew in size, and as they continued expanding, the others were left truly shocked.

Their hearts trembled as they suddenly understood what Aldrian intended to do!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 862 - 862: The Sign to Attack**

[ 1,502 words ]

In the Ancient Blue Gate World, at this moment, people in many regions felt a sudden change in their surroundings. The earth energy suddenly vanished, shocking those who had comprehended earth laws.

This also happened in the Barisan Continent, and the citizens of the empire couldn't help but remember a moment in the past. During the war with the devils in the former devil territory, there was also a time when the earth energy suddenly disappeared.

At that time, a huge rock suddenly fell from the sky, causing the entire continent to tremble. They understood that it was their emperor's doing, and that giant rock was one of his techniques.

Now that something similar had happened, they did not know what to think. Their emperor was far away, so they did not believe this was caused by him. But if it was not their emperor, then what caused this phenomenon?

Many people felt confused, questioning in their minds and talking about it among themselves. There were also those who truly panicked, as they did not understand the sudden disappearance of the earth energy. It was just like the time when Aldrian the Great unleashed his technique to kill many devils.

However, Aldrian the Great was not in this world right now, which made them even more uneasy.

Unbeknown to them, the energy they wondered about had not disappeared but had instead moved to a faraway place, specifically to the outer atmosphere of the Red Mist Star in the Fallen Star Cluster. The congregation of earth energy had been manifested by Aldrian into many massive rocks. They varied in size, but all were enormous.

The smallest was the size of a ten-storey building, while the largest was as wide as a great city plaza. There were hundreds of them, and all of them could fit within Aldrian's domain.

The troops who saw it felt their hearts tremble. Aldrian the Great truly did not care to preserve his energy. To manifest a technique of this scale in space from nothing in one go must have required an immense amount of energy. Even those at the pseudo-immortal stage would not recklessly use this much.

Space was scarce in certain elemental energies, such as earth energy. That was why cultivators who wished to use their earth laws in space had to rely more on their stored internal energy. They could not depend on the energy in space to support their techniques.

Because of this, some cultivators suffered setbacks in space, as they had to work much harder just to perform their normal techniques. They expended far more energy compared to when they were in a place rich in elemental energy.

That was why they were amazed at how Aldrian seemed unconcerned about how much energy he used to perform a technique of this scale in space.

However, they remembered that this was the man who could create countless swords in the upper atmosphere of the Ancient Blue Gate World. They simply accepted that Aldrian was different and that common knowledge and standards could not be applied to him.

After a few moments, the giant rocks finally stopped growing, and suddenly all of them were engulfed in flames. The scorching heat from the flames could be felt from afar, forcing the troops to shield themselves from it.

Even someone at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage could feel their skin burning at that moment, which showed how dangerous the flames were.

After the flames had burned the rocks for a while, Aldrian, still looking down at the world of red mist, spoke a single word.

"Fall."

The rocks then began to descend toward the Red Mist Star, pulled by the planet's gravity. The hundreds of rocks grew faster and faster, and the flames became even more intense due to friction with the atmosphere.

The people watched as the falling rocks formed a massive cluster of meteors that ready to strike the world.

-----

On the surface of the Red Mist Star, inside the palace where Xarz normally stayed, the strongest devil at the moment was within the throne hall. The hall itself remained in fairly good condition despite the palace exterior being partially damaged.

This devil was the next strongest after Xarz and served as his right-hand man. He was also the one responsible for holding the fort whenever Xarz was not present.

He appeared as a middle-aged man from the same race as Xarz—a vampire. His cultivation was at middle pseudo immortal stage.

He sat on the throne, and normally, he enjoyed moments like this, where he could savor the feeling of authority. However, at this time, his heart was restless. In fact, he had felt this way for the past week.

It began when reports arrived that the soul lamps of several high-ranking devils from various factions had suddenly gone out. Those high-ranking devils were among the ones who had departed for the central star cluster to join the great war with Rulleus

All of it happened quickly, but fortunately, the soul lamp of their leader was still burning.

The situation confused him greatly, leaving him uncertain of what to think.

What really happened in the central star cluster? Did something go wrong with the surprise attack? But they were with Rulleus and the troops from the central region of heaven, how could there be a problem?

His thoughts turned toward Aldrian. He was one of those who remained skeptical of the rumors about him. Although he had heard the story directly from Xarz, he still found it hard to believe that Aldrian was truly as the rumors described.

Yet he couldn't help but think of Aldrian since then. Could the rumors be true, and the surprise attack have failed?

As he was deep in thought, he suddenly sensed something from outside. In an instant, he vanished from the throne and reappeared outside, floating near the palace. He looked up at the sky and narrowed his eyes.

The sky was obstructed by red clouds and mist, which made his view of the upper sky unclear, but he could sense something from above. He was the first to notice it, but soon a few other devils sensed it as well and turned their gazes upward.

More and more devils began to feel it and did the same. As time passed, they suddenly felt an intense heat, and at that moment, the strongest devil there felt chill run down his spine.

He could finally sense clearly what was coming.

"Raise the city's barrier!" he roared.

Many devils were stunned for a moment, but they instantly moved according to his order. However, the things approaching from the high sky were already near, and soon they pierced through the clouds and mist.

The devils who finally saw them were utterly shocked. They saw many meteors descending toward their direction. The sight made their bodies tremble, as the heat alone was deadly even for pseudo immortal stage cultivators!

The speed of the meteors was terrifyingly fast, and the smaller fragments had already begun to fall before the barrier could be fully erected.

Those smaller meteors were fragments of the larger ones, created as they burned upon entering the atmosphere. Their speed was the fastest among all the falling meteors.

Boom! Boom!

"Argh!"

"Ahhh!"

The small meteors struck the vast city, and the shockwaves alone injured anyone below the Marquess stage. The waves of flame caused by the impact engulfed the surrounding area, sweeping through everything in their path. Even devils at the Emperor stage were burned to ashes.

Many tried to defend themselves with their own barrier techniques, but the power of the falling meteors was too overwhelming. The flames that burned around the meteors were deadly, their heat strong enough to endanger even pseudo-immortal establishment stage cultivators. Combined with their fall velocity, the meteors were an unstoppable force.

Boom! Boom!

"Argh!"

"Take cover! Take cover! Don't hold them—"

Boom!

Chaos erupted everywhere. The scene of destruction and death spread throughout the city.

The small meteors continued to fall as the barrier finally began to take form. The strongest devil also activated his own barrier technique to protect himself and the area around him. However, the massive meteors still descending from above made his heart turn cold.

If those meteors were to fall directly on the city, they would kill and destroy everything without exception. He could escape using an escape talisman, but that would mean losing their headquarters and many devils in a single sweep.

He gritted his teeth and continued to strengthen his barrier technique as several meteors struck it. He held on, but he knew he couldn't maintain it for long.

With a restless gaze, he kept watching the great barrier that was almost complete, covering the city. When it finally began to block some of the meteors, he let out a sigh of relief.

The barrier was finally completed just as several massive meteors slammed into it.

BOOM! BOOM! BOOM!

From the space, the sight of meteors colliding and exploding was truly spectacular. The force of the impact swept away the red clouds and mist, revealing the surface of the

world for the first time in a long while. The same scene unfolded across many regions where the meteors fell.

Aldrian watched as his creation unleashed destruction, and he finally spoke a single word.

"Attack."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 863 - 863: Only the Beginning

[ 1,493 words ]

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Rumble!

The loud sound of impact spread across many regions as the meteors fell from the sky. Some crashed into the sea, creating massive tsunamis that swept across the coastline. The devils, caught off guard by the sudden attack, fell into panic, and many of them died, swept away by the meteors and tsunamis.

The scene in several regions turned into a purgatory-like world, with flames spreading everywhere. Most of the devils in the areas struck by the meteor impacts did not survive. There were survivors, but all of them were at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage and above.

The situation turned into absolute chaos.

"Arghh, fuck, what the fuck is happening?"

"Is it an attack?! Who the fuck is it?!"

"Run! Go to the underground shelter!"

Shouts and sounds of panic spread throughout the devil headquarters. After the barrier was erected, the massive meteors finally struck it one after another. The impact instantly created loud booming sounds and violent earthquakes that collapsed every standing building in the city.

The palace's damage grew even more severe, and several structures within the palace complex also collapsed.

Xarz's right-hand man looked at the sky with a solemn yet anxious expression. The barrier formed a large crack that spread across its surface.

The power of the impact had almost shattered the barrier, which could normally withstand many attacks from peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators.

From the way he saw it, the barrier would most likely shatter if another large meteor were to fall. He gritted his teeth.

How could there suddenly be so many meteors falling? And right at the time when no one was observing space because they had gone to war.

Even if there was no one observing space, there had never been a precedent for a meteor fall of this scale. Was his luck truly this horrible lately, to experience all these things? The uncertain fate of the troops in the central star cluster, and now these meteors falling just when their strength had greatly weakened with so many gone to war?

As he continued to think and kept his eyes on the sky, he noticed there were no further impacts, which made him sigh in relief. It seemed there were no more meteors after this.

The view outside the barrier was still obstructed by the dust and smoke from the impact, so he couldn't see the sky clearly.

But then, while he was still sighing in relief and thinking that the disaster was over, he sensed something again. He narrowed his eyes before suddenly widening them. He gritted his teeth and looked toward the devils near him.

"Prepare for battle! There's an invasion! We are under attack!" he shouted.

The devils did not take long to start preparing themselves. However, just as they were trying to organize and consolidate their troops—

Dung!

Something heavy suddenly struck the barrier from behind the dust and smoke that covered the sky. The devils who heard it instinctively looked up and saw that the cracks on the barrier had grown more severe. They finally saw what had hit the barrier as the impact swept the dust and smoke aside.

The moment they saw what was behind the smoke, the devils were truly in shock. The sky was suddenly filled with thousands of unknown cultivators and cruisers descending from above.

The thing that had struck the barrier just now actually came from the sword strike of a pseudo-immortal stage cultivator. At this moment, that figure was already preparing to strike again, raising his sword to deliver another blow.

Xarz's right-hand man, who saw the incoming cultivators and the figure attacking the barrier, widened his eyes in disbelief.

That was because he recognized them.

'That's Emperor Rozwald from the Ancient Blue Gate World! How is that possible?!' he shouted in his mind. Goosebumps ran across his skin as he watched Emperor Rozwald swing his sword to deliver another powerful strike.

'Shit, it'll shatter!' He knew the barrier would not hold after this.

True to his prediction—

Clang!

The barrier shattered from the point of impact, the cracks spreading rapidly until the barrier covering the entire city completely collapsed.

"Attack!" Emperor Rozwald shouted before he and many cultivators charged into the city.

"Defend yourselves! Form battle formations!" Xarz's right-hand man shouted as he prepared himself. He knew this was the worst possible situation. With Emperor Rozwald here, there was no one who could stop him. Moreover, the troops the emperor had brought for the attack seemed incredibly strong.

They were likely to lose here.

Emperor Rozwald instantly flew toward the strongest devil at great speed, but several other devils tried to intercept him. Rozwald paid them no attention and simply swung his sword at them. A single swing was enough to kill every devil in his path. Devils at the pseudo-immortal establishment stage were like ants before him.

The aftershock of the sword strike also reached the strongest devil, but he had already created his own barrier using his technique. The sword strike was blocked, but he was thrown from the sky and slammed into the ground with tremendous force.

His body slammed into one of the palace buildings, causing it to collapse. Emperor Rozwald did not stop moving, he wanted to kill the strongest devil here as quickly as possible. Several devils tried to obstruct him using their blood laws, but he simply swung his sword in all directions without even looking at them.

The only thing left behind in his path were dead devils, their bodies cleanly sliced apart so that death was absolute. Emperor Rozwald knew that most of the devils here were from the vampire race, so he made sure each strike would truly kill them, destroying their hearts or souls instantly.

When the emperor finally reached the place where the strongest devil had fallen, he swept his hand to clear away the dust and smoke that blocked his view. As the haze lifted and he looked toward the spot where the devil should have been, he clicked his tongue, there was nothing there.

Xarz's right-hand man had already disappeared.

'Tsk, he escaped. Truly without hesitation,' Emperor Rozwald thought.

'Well, then. I'll just kill the others.'

With that, his body shot off in another direction, and his hunt for the devils continued. The plan from the beginning was clear: no mercy and no prisoners. The moment they saw any devils, they were to kill on sight.

The battle had already broken out in many places across the city. The devils desperately defended themselves, using their devil forms. They fought with everything they had.

However, the absence of many of their higher-ups had truly weakened them. Added to that, the impact of the falling meteors had already killed many devils and caused chaos among their ranks.

The cultivators from the Ancient Blue Gate World, on the other hand, came in organized formations and possessed many powerful fighters. They had sent many cultivators at the immortal transition realm, a realm the devils severely lacked at this moment.

That was why, despite the devils' united efforts and the use of battle formations, they were still defeated by the stronger cultivators from their opponents. Worse still, many troops from the Ancient Blue Gate World had yet to descend. Even without their full numbers, the devils on the ground were already being defeated across many areas.

"Attack! Attack! Attack! Don't let them escape! Kill every one of them!"

"Uwooo!"

"Retreat! Fall back!"

"Uwaghh!"

Shouts from both sides echoed everywhere as the cultivators from the Ancient Blue Gate World continued their slaughter. Elemental attacks from both forces shook the city's ground and sky, but the devils kept getting pushed back until finally, all of them decided to flee from the city.

The alliance forces wanted to pursue them, but they were ordered to stay back. Their target at this time was the devil headquarters, not the pursuit. They could deal with the escaping devils later, after turning this place into their main base camp in this world.

Aldrian, observing from the sky, also killed many of the fleeing devils using his lightning technique. However, the devils scattered in many directions, making it impossible for him to focus on all of them.

The city was vast, and even if he created his domain from where he was floating at this moment, it would not cover the entire city. Hundreds of devils still managed to escape.

Still, he didn't mind letting them run. Sooner or later, they would meet their end.

As time passed, the sounds of battle gradually faded until finally, all fighting ceased. The devils were either dead or had fled the city.

The moment the battlefield fell silent, Emperor Rozwald raised his sword.

"We win!"

"UWOOOO!"

The alliance troops shouted in excitement across the city. This was a historic moment for them, for they had taken the devil headquarters of the fallen star cluster. In the past, they would have never imagined accomplishing this so easily.

Moreover, thanks to good coordination and the element of surprise, there were no casualties among the alliance troops. The stronger cultivators protected the weaker ones, and with their combined strength, the devils had no chance to fight back.

Aldrian nodded in satisfaction at the result. This was only the beginning of the battles to come.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 864 - 864: Easy Battles

[ 1,516 words ]

In other parts of the world, the situation was no less chaotic than in Aldrian's region. The war had spread to many places across the world, and each area had its own method of launching surprise attacks against the devils.

The easiest method, of course, was using beam cannons from interstellar vessels. They fired them toward the surface, creating massive explosions and killing many devils. The devils, who did not expect any attack, fell into panic and chaos. They could not reorganize and instead scattered everywhere because of the sudden assault.

The world that was supposed to be their safe haven suddenly turned into their slaughterhouse. As for the alliance forces, they had already prepared everything for this war. The lower-level cultivators always stayed near those who possessed holy energy. Their groups always included such people to resist the effects of the thick negative energy.

The stronger cultivators at the Immortal Transition Realm could at least endure long enough to kill many devils before needing to fly high into the sky to rest. Even they could not be exposed to the dense negative energy for too long and had to take breaks to avoid being affected by it.

However, there was also a race that was more resilient to thick negative energy, which allowed them to endure longer in this kind of environment.

In one region, the groups of spiritual beasts from the Beast Continent fought valiantly. They battled as if the environment did not affect them while they slaughtered the devils.

"Ahahaha! Why are you running? Come here!"

"Yahaha, kill them! Don't let them escape!"

The shouts from various spiritual beasts colored the battlefield as their surroundings had already fallen into chaos. In this region were several ancient cities that had now become the devils' dwelling places. Their objective was to reclaim these cities and turn them into base camps for the alliance in this world.

"Arghh!"

"Escape! Escape! They're too strong!"

"Get out of the way! Fuck off!"

Many cries from the panicking devils echoed as they ran for their lives. However, the alliance forces did not let them go and continued cutting them down as they tried to flee.

However, despite many devils trying to escape, there were also those who chose to fight. One group of devils had gathered in one place, forming a battle formation. They created a giant avatar, while behind them another group of devils seemed to be trying to summon something.

The giant avatar possessed the strength of the middle Pseudo-Immortal Stage and had a terrifying appearance. It had three heads and six arms like an Asura, and its transparent, crimson body looked truly intimidating. Two of its hands gripped swords, which it swung toward the approaching alliance forces.

"Watch out!" Two spiritual beasts at the middle Pseudo-Immortal Stage stepped forward to block the avatar's strike, as it was aimed at many alliance troops. If the attack landed, there would have been many casualties.

Boom!

The strike was blocked by the two spiritual beasts in their human forms as they activated their shield techniques. A shield of energy in the shape of a turtle shell appeared, blocking the attack. A thunderous sound and strong gust swept across the area as the two swords struck the barrier.

The ground beneath them shattered, yet the shield endured and stopped the attack.

The two spiritual beasts were about to counterattack, but then they sensed something from above. Suddenly, a powerful force descended from the sky and struck the avatar directly in the chest, shattering it instantly.

The devils controlling it coughed up blood as their battle formation collapsed in a single strike from someone. The force did not stop at the avatar, it continued forward, crashing into the group of devils behind it. The remnant energy struck the summoning formation, and the impact tore the land apart.

Boom! Rumble!

"Uwagh!"

"Aghhh!"

The devils who had been trying to summon something were thrown in all directions, and killing some of them.

The alliance forces who witnessed it were truly amazed, as that strike was unbelievably powerful. It not only pierced and destroyed the giant avatar, but even its remnants were

strong enough to destroy everything behind it. They looked up and saw a red-haired, handsome man floating in the sky.

The dragon horns on his forehead revealed that he belonged to the dragon race, and everyone immediately recognized who he was.

"Dragon King!" one of the troops shouted.

The Dragon King remained in position after unleashing his fist technique. Even his stance looked relaxed, as if he had just thrown a casual punch.

That fist had pierced through space itself, and the sheer power behind it was enough to destroy anything in its path. The giant avatar, formed from the combined formation of ten peak Pseudo-Immortal Establishment Stage devils, was nothing more than an ant before his might.

In fact, anything below the Pseudo Immortal Stage was not even worthy of being mentioned in the same breath as him. The Dragon King was already one of the strongest beings beneath the First Heaven. Even among Pseudo-Immortal Stage existences, he stood among the very top.

As the Dragon King watched the devils attempt to flee after he destroyed their formations, he did not allow it. He stretched out his hand toward the escaping devils, and suddenly they felt their movements becoming slower and heavier. It was as if the space itself had turned into a swamp that resisted their every step.

"What the hell is happening?" one of the devils shouted as he forced his body to move.

The Dragon King suddenly clapped his hands, and in that instant, the devils' bodies were crushed from every direction. It was as though the space around them had turned into countless giant hammers striking from all sides.

This was the Dragon King's space-controlling technique—Falling Hammers. The devils' bodies became unrecognizable as bone and flesh splattered across the ground.

However, despite the gruesome sight, no one seemed to care. They continued searching for other devils in the vicinity. The Dragon King still floated in the sky with a calm expression, observing the battlefield to ensure there were no problems. He had already killed many devils since the start of the attack, including the strongest ones in this city.

Whoosh! Rumble!

His gaze shifted toward the distance as he saw several phoenixes in their beast forms flying at high speed, burning their path with the flames surrounding their bodies. The

devils who tried to fight or escape could do nothing but accept death. Their bodies turned to ashes and were swept away by the strong gusts.

The phoenixes destroyed everything in their path, and they seemed eager to continue. It was not surprising, as chances like this were rare. They could unleash their power freely without worrying about anything other than killing the devils. The only thing they had to keep in mind was to avoid harming their allies.

The Phoenix Queen, in her human form, floated above as she watched her kin wreak havoc across the battlefield. She too had already slain many devils, yet her expression showed no emotion. There was nothing here capable of resisting her power.

With both her and the Dragon King present, there were almost no devils who could escape from the city. After nearly thirty minutes, the battle across the city came to an end. It was a brief battle, as the devils could not offer much resistance due to their weakened power and the surprise element. The city and its surrounding region fell into the hands of the alliance forces.

The Dragon King nodded in satisfaction and gave his order.

"Build the purification formation, and inform His Majesty Aldrian that we have succeeded in taking back this place."

A dragon immediately obeyed and flew off to carry out the command.

Scenes of success like this were also unfolding in other regions of the world. One by one, they sent their reports to Aldrian, informing him that the first phase of the plan had succeeded. They had established many bases on the Red Mist Star.

These were strategic locations where the devils had gathered in large numbers. Once the alliance occupied these places, the devils would not only lose their key positions but also their supplies and strength. They would struggle to consolidate their troops and launch any counterattacks.

They would have to regroup in areas not yet targeted by the alliance, which would take time. There were still many regions in this world where the devils remained concentrated, and due to the limited number of alliance troops, those areas had not yet been touched.

However, this was still the first phase. The next phase would involve the alliance expanding their territory. They would attack several more locations according to the plan, which had already outlined the targets based on the information provided by Xarz.

Aldrian, after receiving reports from the other alliance forces, nodded in satisfaction. Everything had gone according to plan, and he was glad that nothing had gone wrong.

He continued to float in the sky, observing the ruined city below. Extending his senses, he tried to feel the congregation of faith energy in the city. Once he sensed it, he turned toward the destroyed palace and flew in that direction.

He would make this city his first domain on the surface of the Red Mist Star.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 865 - 865: The Strange Faith Energy

[ 1,550 words ]

Aldrian arrived at one area of the palace complex and landed on it. Most of the palace's buildings had already turned into rubble because of the earthquakes and the strongest devil that had been thrown into it by Emperor Rozwald. It was not surprising that the palace was fragile, since he thought this place had not been properly maintained for a long time.

He did not believe those devils cared to maintain this place at all.

He arrived at the now half-destroyed throne hall. He could still see the throne, and there, the faith energy itself gathered around it. He thought that this throne was where Xarz always sat.

He approached it before finally creating his domain. The moment he did, he felt refreshed. Power coursed through him as he spread his domain sense across the city.

With him making this city his domain, it had already become the safest place in this world for the moment. The environment was no longer suitable for the devils. The negative energy would gradually decrease as time went by, even without them having to build a purification formation.

Just like its name suggests, the purification formation is used to purify something—in this case, excessive negative energy. The places where the devils built their bases must have been filled with dense negative energy, which truly caused headaches for anyone who wanted to attack them.

The thick negative energy that could affect every cultivator's mind and capability made this kind of environment unsuitable for any normal cultivator to stay in. This was also one of the reasons why the places occupied by the devils were too difficult to take back.

However, cultivators in the past eventually developed something that could purify excessive negative energy. In the distant past, they had a purifying formation for poisonous air, but later modified it into one that could purify negative energy instead.

With this formation, they could live within environments filled with thick negative energy, such as the devil territories. This remains one of the most useful formations for anyone who wants to attack the devil territories even to this day.

Aldrian's domain had that function as well, but it was more effective, and the effect could be felt instantly. The moment the domain was created, the troops could sense the change in the negative energy surrounding them. Slowly, they felt the negative energy recede, which made some of them look at each other.

"Is the purification formation already finished?"

"No, not yet."

Confusion appeared on their faces, as both of them knew they sensed the same thing. The negative energy was decreasing rapidly. Although some of them were confused, they continued to create the purification formation that covered many areas of the city.

That way was quicker and simpler than creating a formation that covered the entire city.

Once Aldrian was done creating his domain, he began to sense another detail, the flow of faith energy in this world. He tried to determine the direction where all the faith energy of this world was gathering.

After he focused for a few moments, he narrowed his eyes because what he sensed was that the faith energy actually flowed into the void before disappearing. The flow of energy did not move as he expected. Normally, it would move in one direction, towards somewhere specific.

He pondered for a moment about what made this situation different from other worlds. After thinking for a minute, he raised his eyebrows and sighed.

'Is it because the beings here worship Tarius, so the faith energy does not gather in the hidden place but flows to him?' he thought.

If that was the case, then he had to reconsider how the faith-gathering places built by his past followers worked. He should have realized that faith energy always flowed toward the one they placed their faith in.

If all the faith energy had simply gathered in a hidden place, then Tarius would have known that something was wrong in the First Heaven long ago.

Aldrian knew that if Tarius had known about that place, the first thing the devils would have done once they occupied a world was destroy it. But from his understanding, based on the memories of those devils, they seemed unaware of the existence of such a place.

From what he sensed of the faith energy, the places built by his past followers were meant to gather faith energy from anyone across the world who had not yet chosen to worship a specific god. They simply believed that the heavens were the highest authority in general.

If people wholeheartedly worship a god, then of course their faith energy will flow to the place where that god resides. If that is the case—

'Then how am I supposed to make the entire world like this one my domain?' Aldrian thought. But then, a realization struck him, and he slapped his forehead.

'Wait, why am I even confused about how to make this world my domain? Even though the faith of the beings in this world does not gather in the hidden place, there is still another place where the world itself stores faith energy.'

'The place where the world gathers the faith of all things. The natural place for faith to gather, even before the hidden place built by my followers.'

He suddenly remembered the information from Kim Seungjin, the son of the Heavenly Demon.

After he made the entire Ancient Blue Gate World his domain, he could sense the details of the world's karma and faith. His comprehension of karma and the world deepened, and he remembered what Kim Seungjin had said.

Something had truly intrigued him the first time he sensed it. Deep underground, he could feel the place where faith gathered before the hidden faith-gathering places had been built. However, the strange thing was the faith energy itself. It was very different from the faith that gathered in the hidden places.

The faith energy in that place felt more primordial and natural.

He could not fully describe the sensation, but "primordial and natural" were the closest words he could find. He simply felt that this faith energy differed from all other faith energy. It was more abstract yet intimately connected to the world itself.

At that moment Aldrian thought more deeply about it. He had not dwelt on this matter much in the past. He only thought that the faith energy inside the world was unique.

Now he suddenly felt there was something much deeper about that faith energy, something more profound that might be connected to his domain ability itself, about how

his domain was created in greater detail, why heaven and earth reacted to his domain, and why they became submissive to him the moment his domain was formed.

He took a meditative position and pondered deeply. He felt he had touched something that might be connected to another of his secrets. His domain ability still contained mysteries he sought to answer. He thought this strange faith energy might reveal another secret of his domain ability.

He concentrated and focused on the two worlds that had already become his domain—the Ancient Blue Gate World and the Akares Star. He felt the two worlds as though they were part of his own body. Then, he focused on the places where he could sense that strange faith energy.

In both worlds, the places where faith gathered seemed to share the same location, deep underground, almost reaching the world's core. To reach those places by traditional means, drilling through the layers of the world, he estimated it would take nearly a month.

The strange faith energy gathered around what appeared to be a patch of obsidian rock surrounded by lava. The lava itself was so intense that even a peak pseudo immortal cultivator would find it dangerous to approach.

However, Aldrian ignored the lava and focused solely on the faith energy. He directed his domain senses toward it, trying to describe what he felt in his mind.

'This strange faith energy is primordial and natural. It feels as if it does not come from normal living beings. This faith energy seems... it seems more like... it comes from nature itself. Could it be the faith of the world itself? The world itself have faith?'

His consciousness slowly drifted away as he continued to comprehend the mystery of the faith energy. His understanding of his domain deepened as he felt he had touched upon one of its hidden mysteries.

'The faith of the world itself... the faith of the world... the world has its own faith, and that faith is directed toward...' As his comprehension of faith deepened, his consciousness was suddenly drawn elsewhere.

He found himself surrounded by darkness. He floated freely, unable to tell any direction. In this place, he felt nothing.

It was as if he existed within pure nothingness.

He could not help but recall the place he had experienced a few times in the past.

His being's essence.

However, this place lacked the lone star that existed within his being's essence. So where was this place?

Suddenly, he felt a presence. Its appearance was so abrupt it was as if it had simply appeared out of nothing, and then he heard a familiar voice.

"From nothingness to existence."

It was the voice of that mysterious man.

A blinding light enveloped his vision, and when it receded, he found himself already within his being's essence. The lone star was much closer now, yet he did not focus on it.

His heartbeat quickened, for he had just experienced something extraordinary.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 866 - 866: After the Battle

[ 1,482 words ]

Aldrian's heart beat faster as he had just experienced something amazing. In that moment of blinding light, he could sense many things. No—calling it many was an understatement; he could sense all things.

At first, he felt nothingness, but that blinding light burst forth with every existence that shaped the cosmos—time, space, natural laws, the heavens, everything. That blinding light was like the sign of the beginning of all that exists.

In that brief moment, it was as if he perceived everything at once, but he could not absorb it at all. They were too complex and too profound for him as he was now.

He wondered what that vision meant. What was that place? When was that? What was the connection between the faith of the world to that vision?

What was that mysterious man trying to tell him with those words?

He took a deep breath to calm himself. Many questions popped into his mind, but the vision stopped there. He thought that he would not get the answers for now, so he decided to focus on what was in front of him.

At this moment, he was inside his being's essence. It had already been a few months since the last time he entered his being's essence. The distance between him and the lone star was getting closer.

Its light grew more intense as he kept getting closer.

'Well, let's cultivate for now. This is a good chance. It's been quite some time since the last time I cultivated here.'

This was not an everyday chance for him to enter his own being's essence.

Thus, he closed his eyes and started to cultivate.

-----

In the real world, more than an hour had already passed. The troops were working to clean the city of rubble. They were trying to make the place comfortable enough to serve as their base for as long as they stayed here. Purification formations had already been created in many areas across the city and outside of it, where the interstellar vessels and cruisers had landed.

The interstellar vessels and cruisers had landed around the city and disembarked the rest of the troops who had only acted as support during the earlier battle. They had been waiting in their vessels in the sky.

Baek Jimin, Xin Haotian, and the others from the Aster Empire disembarked from their vessel. They did not have the chance to join the battle earlier because the vanguard groups that attacked consisted of members from other powers. Their battle would come later, when the operation expanded to other regions.

Thanks to the purification formations, by the time they stepped out, the effect of the negative energy had already been greatly reduced.

Still, they needed to be careful when going outside. For cultivators below the Emperor Stage, it was forbidden to be exposed to the negative energy outside the formations for more than a minute to prevent the worst from happening.

They had to move quickly to areas covered by purification formations whenever they went outside.

Baek Jimin and the others then walked toward their accommodations, which consisted of several giant tents. The people from the Aster Empire were assigned to an area near the palace, which at this moment was already being cleared. Most of the palace grounds had been flattened, leaving only a few buildings standing, including the half-destroyed throne hall.

Baek Jimin decided to take the same tent as Angelica after they arrived at their designated area. After settling in, she met Prince Ronwell, who seemed busy talking to two of his men. She approached him and greeted him.

"Excuse me, Prince Ronwell."

Prince Ronwell, who was still talking to his men, turned his head toward Baek Jimin and smiled.

"Your Majesty," he said. His men, knowing they should leave, bowed slightly to him.

"Then we will go first, Your Highness," one of them said before they also looked at Baek Jimin and bowed again.

"Your Majesty," they said. Baek Jimin nodded before they left.

After they were gone, Prince Ronwell looked at her and asked,

"Your Majesty, is there something you need?"

"Ah, my apologies if I'm disturbing you. I just wanted to ask where Aldrian is. I haven't seen him since earlier," she said.

Prince Ronwell smiled and nodded. "It's okay, Your Majesty. You're not disturbing me. As for His Majesty, he's in that half-destroyed building." He pointed toward the partially ruined structure not far from them.

"It seems he has been cultivating for the past hour, and because he appears to have entered an enlightenment state, we didn't dare to disturb him. My father is near His Majesty to make sure he isn't interrupted."

Baek Jimin raised her eyebrows. Aldrian cultivating at this moment?

"Let me escort Your Majesty to His Majesty," he added before walking ahead. Baek Jimin followed him until they finally arrived at the destroyed building. There, she saw Emperor Rozwald giving instructions to some of his generals, pointing to several places while they nodded in response.

When Emperor Rozwald noticed her, a smile appeared on his face. His generals quickly excused themselves to carry out his orders.

"Your Majesty," the emperor greeted.

Baek Jimin nodded. Truthfully, she still was not used to being respected by these high-level cultivators who were many times stronger than her.

However, as one of Aldrian's women, she had to maintain the dignity worthy of that position. She was the woman of Aldrian the Great, and she could not show herself as lesser than anyone, even if they were emperors of other empires or far stronger than her.

"Emperor Rozwald," Baek Jimin greeted.

"Does Your Majesty wish to see His Majesty Aldrian?" the emperor asked, to which Baek Jimin replied with a simple "Yes."

"His Majesty is inside this ruined place. He seems to be cultivating here, which surprised me. I must say, His Majesty truly can cultivate anywhere, even in such a hostile place," Emperor Rozwald said as he began walking, guiding Baek Jimin toward Aldrian.

After walking for a while, they finally arrived at the throne hall, where Baek Jimin saw Aldrian in a meditation position. Just as Prince Ronwell and Emperor Rozwald had said, Aldrian seemed to be cultivating. She was not too surprised that he could cultivate anywhere, as from his past experiences, he seemed capable of doing so without difficulty.

However, she wondered what made Aldrian suddenly decide to cultivate here. She thought this was not a good time for cultivation, so why? She observed him for a moment before setting the thought aside. Aldrian must have his own reasons for cultivating here.

"Thank you for guarding Aldrian, Emperor Rozwald. But allow me to take your place. You must need some rest after the battle, and there are still many matters to handle since we've just taken control of this city," Baek Jimin said.

"Ah, no, Your Majesty, it's nothing. I can still guard this place while coordinating with the others. I'm not really tired from the battle, there was nothing here that could tire me. Those devil weaklings weren't even enough to make me break a sweat, so don't worry," Emperor Rozwald replied confidently.

"Still, Emperor Rozwald could focus more on other matters. Let me take care of Aldrian," Baek Jimin said with a smile.

Emperor Rozwald, knowing it would be better for Baek Jimin to stay near Aldrian, nodded. "I see. Then, if Your Majesty needs anything, just tell anyone nearby. They'll be ready to help with whatever you require. We'll take our leave, then," the emperor said before he and his son left, leaving Baek Jimin alone with Aldrian.

Once alone, Baek Jimin looked back at Aldrian. She walked toward him and stood beside him, observing his handsome face, which at that moment was filled with serenity. He didn't react even when her face was close to his.

She decided not to disturb him further and instead observed the half-destroyed hall around them. It was an ancient palace that, in the distant past, had been the center of power for an ancient empire before the devils occupied this place.

There were still some symbols engraved on the broken walls—the symbols of that past empire, silent witnesses to its fall. She could not imagine the situation back then, when many people of this world had to abandon their home and flee.

They had left behind the world they once called home.

As Baek Jimin observed the place, and the troops from the Ancient Blue Gate World had successfully established their foundation in this world, many devils were still running for their lives.

One of them was the right-hand man of Xarz, who at this moment was flying as fast as he could after escaping from the headquarters using an escape talisman. He knew he would surely die if he faced Emperor Rozwald, so he had decisively fled.

He gritted his teeth. He still could not understand how there had suddenly been a surprise attack from the forces of the Ancient Blue Gate World, but now was not the time to think about it.

For now, he needed to reach another devil base to coordinate a counterattack. They would have to reclaim their headquarters!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 867 - 867: While He Was Cultivating**

[ 1,567 words ]

A week later, Aldrian was still in his meditative position. For the past week, he had not moved a bit, and his aura kept getting stronger. The city had also completely changed, with the rubble of the buildings gone. Now, it was only a flat land filled with large tents for the troops to stay in.

The only ancient buildings still standing were the ruins of the destroyed palace complex. Since Aldrian was still cultivating, no one dared to disturb him to clean up the rubble there.

At this moment, Baek Jimin was talking with Angelica as they discussed something. For the past week, she, Xin Haotian, and Angelica had taken turns guarding Aldrian here.

As they continued their conversation, they suddenly sensed something and turned their heads toward Aldrian. They could feel that the energy surrounding him had stopped reacting to him, which was a sign that Aldrian had finished his cultivation.

The energy around Aldrian returned to its normal flow after a few moments. He slowly opened his eyes, and a golden hue flashed across them before disappearing. He took a deep breath and looked at his own body's information through the system.

-----

Aldrian Aster

Domain : Ancient Blue Gate World, Akares Star

Age : 17 years

Cultivation : Low Pseudo Immortal Establishment

Current energy : 17,978,123 (+14 /10m)

Energy needed for the next stage : 18,000,001

-----

He was quite surprised that his cultivation had increased so much, with him almost reaching the middle pseudo-immortal establishment stage. His cultivation speed had also improved.

This was a welcome surprise because he thought he would still need a long time before he could raise his cultivation this significantly. He had believed he would have to invade the central region of heaven to achieve such progress.

The unexpected comprehension regarding himself truly brought great benefits to him. He just did not expect that his attempt to comprehend that strange faith energy would instead lead him to glimpse into the universe's history.

Although he did not fully understand the true meaning of what he saw in his vision, at least he understood that the world had its own faith, and it was connected to that blinding light. That light was the beginning of everything. He could sense everything from it.

The mysterious man who was undoubtedly connected to him also had something to do with the blinding light. Because of that, he understood more about his domain ability—how the domain could possess such power as it did now. He grasped it more clearly.

If that mysterious man was connected to the creation of the cosmos, to the primordial era when nothing became something, then it made sense that his domain encompassed all things. It was starting to make more sense, the domain that could control the universe and everything within it.

Just thinking about it already gave him goosebumps.

It was no wonder that when he saw his past life, he saw his past self controlling the universe's order at will. He could create stars, worlds, galaxies, even the heavenly laws, he could create anything with ease.

But this made him think more about the origin of that mysterious man, his past self, and the connection between them.

From what he understood so far, that mysterious man and his past self, when he was still the revered Great Emperor of All Heavens, seemed like two different people.

From his visions up to this point, the oldest one he had received was from the time when he was the Great Emperor. All of his different past lives always traced back to that era.

As for the visions regarding that mysterious man, they felt more like that person was trying to reveal something to him or share advice and wisdom. He never saw from that man's point of view as he did with his own past life as the Great Emperor.

He once thought that the mysterious man was also one of his past lives, but he was not sure. All of his abilities indeed came from that man, as confirmed by him. It was the same ability that his past self as the Emperor also possessed, which made it clear that they originated from the same source.

However, since the oldest vision he had came from when he was still the Great Emperor, he was not certain about his guess that the mysterious man was one of his past lives. The origin of that man seemed to reach back to a much more ancient era, even before his time as the Great Emperor.

The connection between his past self and that mysterious man, which allowed his past self to use that man's ability, was still uncertain. Maybe his past self had been a person with great luck who obtained that mysterious man's power through a fortunate encounter.

Perhaps that mysterious man had bestowed his power upon his past self personally. Who knew?

'Forget it, I won't have any answer for now,' he thought as he put those thoughts aside and looked around. He did not know how long he had been cultivating, but seeing Baek Jimin and Angelica made him smile. He stood up as they approached him.

"For how long did I cultivate?" he asked.

"You were already cultivating for a week," Baek Jimin replied, which left Aldrian stunned. He sighed.

"A week? To think I cultivated that long in this situation. How is the war going?"

Baek Jimin then told him everything that had happened during the past week. The alliance troops had already expanded their territory of operation and attacked any devils in the surrounding regions. There were several cities, and those were their main targets according to the plan.

The alliance troops had already captured some of those cities, while others were still in the process of being taken, as the devils chose to defend themselves within them. Some places needed more time to break through because of the devils' defenses, and the troops also remained cautious of possible traps.

However, it was only a matter of time before all of them fell. In other far regions, they were also showing good progress as their operations continued to expand. The devils were being pushed back further and further into the remaining territories not yet occupied by the alliance.

The only bad news was that there had finally been some casualties, though this was already expected by many. It was too optimistic to hope for no losses in a war of this scale. Moreover, they were fighting the devils on their own turf, which gave the enemy a certain advantage over the alliance troops.

Aldrian sighed once again. Although he had expected it, he still felt bad for those who had fallen.

"Where is Emperor Rozwald?" he asked.

"He's in the far north at the moment. There's one city there that hasn't been conquered yet. He'll return only after that city falls. Oh, and some of the forces from our empire have also joined in the north," Baek Jimin answered.

"What about that guy Xarz? Has he done anything while we've been here?" he asked again.

"No, Xarz is still acting cooperative. He answers whenever we ask him something, and his information has been accurate so far," Baek Jimin replied.

Aldrian nodded. "Alright then, I'll go to the north to support the alliance."

Baek Jimin nodded. "I thought so."

Aldrian then looked toward Angelica and smiled at her. "Thank you for accompanying Jimin all this time."

Angelica smiled back at him. "Ah, it's nothing. I also like accompanying Jimin. I have a friend I can talk to here, so I don't feel bored."

Aldrian nodded. "I'm glad to hear that. Then, I'll go first. I feel bad for them going to battle without me."

His figure suddenly disappeared as he teleported high into the sky, reaching the limit of his domain. He appeared in the upper atmosphere before teleporting again toward the northern direction.

Even from where he was, he could see several interstellar vessels from the alliance forces floating in the distant upper atmosphere. One of them fired a beam cannon toward the surface of the world, which he assumed was the battlefield.

Without hesitation, he continued teleporting toward that direction.

-----

In the far north, a city was currently under attack by the alliance forces. The city had already raised its barrier, and many devils could be seen inside, watching as the attacks struck against it.

Duung!

Rumble!

The beam cannon's blast hit the barrier, creating ripples across its surface. The ground trembled slightly, but the barrier still held firm until the beam attack finally stopped.

The alliance troops, led by Emperor Rozwald, were not far from the city walls as they formed their battle formation. Emperor Rozwald stood at the forefront, his gaze locked on the city.

He couldn't help but snort at the sight of the devils, who could now only hide within their city. They had been pushed back again and again until they were finally forced to shelter behind the barrier.

He mocked them, knowing it was only a matter of time before the barrier broke. They only needed to keep attacking. Although it would take some time to destroy a barrier

capable of withstanding multiple attacks from peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators, he did not mind. He had all the time he needed until it shattered.

"Keep attacking! Let them stay trapped inside the city!" he ordered the operators of the interstellar vessels through the communication artifact.

He was about to store the communication artifact in his storage ring when a sudden voice resounded.

"Your Majesty, we've detected movement coming from the rear lines!" a report came abruptly from one of the interstellar vessels floating in the upper atmosphere.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 868 - 868: Rain of Swords

[ 1,680 words ]

The report caused Emperor Rozwald to narrow his eyes.

"That figure is coming from the direction of headquarters and approaching fast! That figure... that figure uses long-range teleportation movement with almost no intervals. Your Majesty, he has almost arrived," the report continued.

Emperor Rozwald kept his eyes narrowed, but then he widened his eyes as he suddenly realized who it might be.

"It's His Majesty Aldrian the Great, Your Majesty! At this moment he has stopped and is floating not far from us!" another report came in.

Just as he thought, the one approaching was Aldrian, and he could not help but smile. It seemed this battle would be much faster than he had imagined. The beam cannon attacks stopped, but he did not question it since they would naturally stop the moment Aldrian appeared near them.

After waiting for more than fifteen seconds, Emperor Rozwald grew confused because Aldrian did not seem to be approaching this place. Then suddenly an urgent voice came.

"Your Majesty, Aldrian the Great will unleash that technique again!"

Emperor Rozwald's confusion deepened at this, but as if sensing it, the other side continued before he even needed to ask.

"Aldrian the Great will use that sword technique again! That countless-swords thing!"

The moment Emperor Rozwald heard that, he felt goosebumps and looked behind him at his troops.

"I give an order for all of you to retreat two kilometres! Retreat! Retreat!" he shouted, causing his troops to freeze for a moment. They did not understand why Emperor Rozwald would give such an order, but they obeyed him. They began to retreat in a disciplined manner.

Emperor Rozwald looked up at the sky, which appeared red from where he stood, yet he could still see the high sky clearly. Thanks to the repeated beam cannon attacks, they had cleared the clouds and mist in this area, allowing him to see beyond.

At this moment, he finally saw countless glimmering lights clustered in the sky. But he knew those were not stars. Those were the early signs of disaster!

The devils inside the city noticed that the beam cannon attacks had stopped and there were no follow-up attacks. The devils on the defensive wall also saw Emperor Rozwald and his troops pulling back, which left them confused.

"Why did they stop attacking? Did they already give up?" one of the devils asked.

"Yeah, let them retreat. I think they gave up because of the strong barrier. Not even a peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivator could break it!" another devil shouted.

"Yeah! At least we bought more time until reinforcement arrives! After that we can strike back at those bastards for attacking our world!" another one commented.

However, not all devils were immediately happy with Emperor Rozwald's sudden retreat. Some became more cautious, thinking it was part of an unknown plan.

'What is that guy planning by retreating when their position is at an advantage?' one pseudo-immortal devil thought. He narrowed his eyes as he watched the retreating troops in the distance. Then he saw Emperor Rozwald looking toward the sky, which made him also look up.

At first, he thought there was nothing wrong with the sky. Nothing had changed except for the clouds and mist that had been cleared away by the beam cannon attacks.

But after focusing more carefully, he finally noticed a small detail.

'Wait, are there usually this many stars visible from here?' he thought as his frown deepened. But then he finally noticed a change in the glimmering "stars" in the sky as all of them began to move.

At first he could not determine their exact direction because of the distance. But after a few seconds he finally sensed that the "stars" were actually descending toward his direction, and it sent goosebumps across his body. What he sensed horrified him.

"EVERYONE TAKE COVER INSIDE THE UNDERGROUND SHELTERS!" he roared.

His shout echoed across the vast city, startling many devils. At this moment, several devils at the pseudo-immortal stage also sensed something falling from the sky, and it made all of them shudder. They shouted the same warning before rushing toward the shelters or activating escape talismans they had prepared earlier.

The devils who still did not understand what was happening assumed something serious was going on and immediately obeyed their leaders.

Meanwhile, Emperor Rozwald and his troops were still in the middle of their retreat when they finally sensed something falling from above. Those who had reached the pseudo-immortal stage felt horrified as they looked up and saw countless glimmering objects descending at incredible speed.

They finally saw the shape of the falling objects, and all of them were actually countless golden swords that carried the power of a peak pseudo-immortal stage strike. They immediately understood why Emperor Rozwald had ordered them to retreat. He did not want them to be caught in the crossfire.

As the countless swords drew closer to the surface of the world, everyone could sense their presence, and it made all of them stare at the rain of golden swords. The devils were truly horrified, to the point that they forgot about escaping as they watched the countless swords finally reach the city's barrier.

Dung! Dung! Dung!

Crash! Crash! Crash!

The barrier did not even last a second when the swords struck it. With the sheer number of swords, combined with their speed and momentum, there was no way the barrier could withstand the assault. The moment it shattered, the apocalypse descended upon the devils.

Boom! Boom! Boom! Boom!

The countless swords destroyed everything in front of them. They were not piercing, they were obliterating. Each sword's impact created a crater, and with countless swords raining down, the catastrophic scene in the city was beyond imagination.

There were many swords that fell not far outside the city, but none of them landed near Emperor Rozwald and the alliance troops. They stopped their retreat when they saw that the rain of swords was only targeting the city. The scene was truly chaotic and terrifying at the same time.

The rain continued as if the number of swords were never ending. The rumbling impact of the swords striking the ground echoed everywhere, and the ground trembled from the force. There was nothing that could stop the rain of swords. The city walls collapsed as the swords tore through them.

Every standing structure inside the city was also destroyed. They collapsed easily the moment a sword pierced through them. The devils who had already hidden underground were no more fortunate. The power and momentum of the swords allowed them to pierce deep underground even after hitting the surface.

In fact, the swords could pierce more than a kilometre deep. The underground shelters the devils spoke of were far shallower than that. The cries of horror and despair from the devils were drowned out by the rumbling sound of the apocalypse spreading across the vast area of the city.

Dust from the collapsing buildings had already covered the entire city, completely obstructing the view of anyone trying to see the destruction within.

The rumbling sound, the trembling ground, and the continuous rain of swords went on for more than fifteen seconds before the rain finally stopped. At this moment, the alliance troops were still staring at the city in amazement, their hearts trembling from the display of power they had just witnessed.

They already knew that this had to be Aldrian the Great. This was the same technique many had seen on the day he annihilated millions of devils in space.

He had finally emerged from his seclusion and joined the battle!

The troops from the Aster Empire who were among the alliance troops could not help but smile with pride. Initially, Emperor Rozwald had not wanted to include them in the alliance force for the expansion of the operation. They were directly under Aldrian, and he did not dare take them without Aldrian's permission.

However, because they wanted to join the battle and contribute, they insisted. After Emperor Ladwin—who was said to be Aldrian's father-in-law—persuaded him, Emperor Rozwald finally included them in the force. Since then, they had already participated in several battles up to this moment.

Seeing their emperor in action still filled them with pride as they noticed the amazement in the eyes of others. There was nothing like their emperor.

Emperor Rozwald, who was still observing the aftermath of swords apocalypse, suddenly received another incoming communication. He took out his communication artifact from his pouch and connected to it.

"Your Majesty, Aldrian the Great has already moved in another direction. At this moment he is heading toward the far west. Aldrian the Great sent a message saying that he is sorry for joining only now. He will take care of the remaining devils in the region after this. Your Majesty may handle the aftermath," the report came from the other side.

Emperor Rozwald smiled and nodded. "Alright, the message is received."

He stored the artifact again and looked at the troops behind him.

"All troops move forward! Secure what is left in the city. If there are any survivors, make sure there are no survivors," he shouted before flying forward, followed by the troops.

After a few moments, they arrived at the edge of the destroyed city wall. The thick dust had already begun to clear, and they could faintly see the aftermath, which made their hearts tremble.

Total destruction.

Those were the only words they could use to describe it.

The city was already flattened into rubble, with many large craters ranging from tens to hundreds of meters across the surface. They did not see any movement at all, and they doubted that anyone could have survived that attack.

Emperor Rozwald took a deep breath before finally giving his order.

"Alright, spread according to your groups. Be careful of any devils that might have survived the attack just now. Do not let yourself get caught off guard!"

After that, the alliance troops began to spread out and sweep through the entire city. They needed to make sure this place was safe from devils so that they could rebuild the city in the future.

While Emperor Rozwald and his troops were taking care of the aftermath, Aldrian was already in another place to do his part after being absent for a week.

He was on fire and wanted to unleash it on the devils!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 869 - 869: Opposite Situation

[ 1,681 words ]

At the far west from the headquarters, more than a million alliance troops were also in the midst of their assault on the last devil stronghold on this side of the region. This million-strong force was led by one of Emperor Rozwald's generals who was at the pseudo immortal stage.

At this moment, they were besieging a fortress where many devils had already sealed themselves inside. The fortress area itself was truly vast and protected by thick defensive walls.

The barrier that protected the fortress also had the same quality as those used in big cities. It could withstand many attacks from a peak pseudo immortal stage before breaking.

This only showed that the devils in this world truly did not hesitate to spend any resources to make any place they lived in possess strong defenses. These kinds of places must have consumed many resources just to maintain them.

The alliance troops already had support from one interstellar vessel in the upper atmosphere, and it had even fired the beam cannon a few times. However, the barrier currently erected around the fortress still had not shattered.

The general also did not rush things, since the alliance already knew about this information, so that was why they were patient with this war. If the devils did not want to come out of their turtle shell, then they would have to destroy it first even though it would take time. They were going to stay in this world until it was liberated from the devils.

As he observed the erected barrier that they were still trying to break with the combined attacks from several battle formations, he suddenly received an incoming communication through his communication artifact.

After he connected to it and heard the report being delivered, his eyes widened before he looked at the alliance troops.

"All breaker groups, retreat behind the red line, retreat behind the red line! I give the order for all troops to retreat behind the red line!" he shouted, causing many troops to be stunned.

The cultivators in the battle formations that were still attacking the barrier stopped their attacks. They were confused, but they obeyed and retreated. Just like what happened on Emperor Rozwald's battlefield, many were confused by the leader's decision.

However, the moment they saw the rain of swords descending from heaven, they were truly grateful that their leader had ordered the retreat.

If they were caught in the crossfire, there was no way they could withstand it and they would be instantly obliterated by those strikes. They even doubted if their bodies would leave anything behind.

The vast fortress was utterly destroyed without leaving any structure standing. The entire fortress was flattened into rubble. This was truly like a dream, since the strong fortress that had been standing fifteen seconds ago was already gone.

With this attack, they knew that Aldrian the Great had finally come out from his cultivation and joined the battle, and he joined it with a show of great power!

After destroying the fortress, Aldrian did not stop there as he then moved in another direction. He would help the alliance troops who were still engaged in battle with the groups of devils. The alliance troops had almost taken this vast region entirely.

Later that day, thanks to Aldrian, the region finally fell under the alliance forces. The battle that they thought would take another three days at most was finished today.

-----

Night finally fell on the region where the headquarters was located. The night on the Red Mist Star was much darker than in a normal world, just like any territory that had already fallen into the devils' hands. The red atmosphere and mist prevented the light from other stars from penetrating the surface of the world.

That had been the case across the world for many generations.

However, over the past few days, the headquarters had seen a different sky scenery. The red atmosphere above the city now showed a clear and beautiful night sky. The glimmering stars could be seen clearly from their position, just like on any normal world.

This was something that raised questions among many people here. From the experience of many, the sky should not have cleared this fast even if they had already set up a purification formation. Because of the negative energy that had accumulated for so long, the process of returning the atmosphere to normal could take months.

Moreover, they were in a world where the devils had already lived for a long time.

They did not understand how the negative energy in the city had already returned to normal levels, and they felt as if they were living in a normal world even though not even a week had passed since they landed on this world.

Many looked for the answer, and even Emperor Rozwald wanted to know the reason.

But this was the first time they had experienced something like this, and they still could not find the cause. Many simply gave up looking for the cause and moved on, thanking the heavens for this strange phenomenon.

However, for some people, their thoughts eventually turned toward Aldrian.

They did not know why, but they felt that Aldrian had done something that made this kind of phenomenon possible. They wanted to ask him about it, but he was in cultivation, so they stored their questions in their minds.

For whatever caused this strange phenomenon, they did not care as long as it benefited them.

At this moment, Aldrian was inside the largest tent erected in the headquarters. Beside him were many important figures such as Emperor Rozwald, Prince Ronwell, and the generals of the alliance force. Of course, Baek Jimin, Angelica, Xin Haotian, and the leaders from the Aster Empire were also present.

They had gathered here in a joyous mood to celebrate the successful steps in the mission to take back the Red Mist Star entirely from the devils' hands. Aldrian stood in the middle of the gathered people as he raised a glass of wine in his hand.

"To all of you, the brave warriors who battled the devils with valor, the ones who will be written in history as the warriors involved in this war to cleanse the devils from this world. May the glory always follow us!"

"May the glory always follow us!" the others said in unity before they drank the wine.

After they drank the wine, Emperor Rozwald, who was much closer to Aldrian, spoke to him.

"Your Majesty, with you here, I think it will not take long before the entire Red Mist Star is taken back from the devils. There is already no way those devils have the power to face our combined force, but with Your Majesty joining the battle directly, I think this will be a walk in the park."

The others also agreed as they heard it. Aldrian just smiled and shook his head.

"No, although I might be powerful, I am only one man, and my ability and capability are limited to a certain extent. The real heroes are all of you who have been fighting this past week without me. I am truly sorry I had to unexpectedly cultivate as I received an enlightenment at that moment," he said.

"Ah, that is nothing, Your Majesty. If, at that time, Your Majesty truly received enlightenment, then you must take it. Moments like that do not come often, and if I were in Your Majesty's shoes, I would also have instantly entered seclusion," Emperor Rozwald said.

"Moreover, Your Majesty's opening strike, when you created all of those meteorites, was enough to kill many devils in many places and destroy many of their fortresses and hideouts in the surrounding region. That made it easier for our forces to strike them, and it shortened the time needed for us to take the entire vast region." He added.

"Yes, Your Majesty, we don't mind at all. Your Majesty can take your time to cultivate. Besides, with Your Majesty not joining the battle, we had a chance to fight those devil bastards—something impossible if Your Majesty had joined, because Your Majesty would have already killed all of them in one sweep," one of the generals said in a joking tone, which made the others laugh.

The others also shared their opinions, showing that they had no problem with him not joining the battle earlier.

Aldrian smiled as he nodded to their comments.

"Thank you for your understanding and support. Now that we have already taken back the vast land in this world, the time when this world will finally be free from the devils will not be far off. Let us keep our good work and not let ourselves become arrogant because of our current success. Do not underestimate the devils' cunning nature," he said.

"Yes, Your Majesty!" the others answered in unison.

While the alliance force was in a festive mood, the opposite happened on the devils' side. There were still many places and regions that had not yet been touched by the alliance force because of their limited numbers. However, it was only a matter of time before they reached these places as well.

One such place was a city in a region far from the alliance force. Inside this city, Xarz's right-hand man was staying. He was staying inside one of the mansions where the local devil noble had lived in the past. The leader of the noble family here was also one of the devils who had joined Rulleus to the central star cluster along with many of his men and family members.

So this mansion only had a few devils staying in it at this moment, and he simply used it as his temporary dwelling.

After he escaped from the headquarters, he fled to a nearby city, but then he had to escape again as the alliance force kept pushing them back.

The alliance force's momentum was unstoppable, and the devils continued to lose ground.

This frustrated him because this was the first time he had felt something like this—no, this was the first time the devils here had ever been pushed this far.

At this moment, he was sitting inside his private bedroom, thinking about the current situation when he heard a knock on the door.

"Excuse me, my lord, another report has come."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 870 - 870: The Bad Situation and Solution?**

[ 1,697 words ]

"Excuse me, my lord, another report has come." A voice came from outside the room before the doors opened. Once the doors opened, a figure draped in a black robe entered and stood not far from Xarz's right-hand man, who was currently the leader of the devils in this world.

"What is it?" the leader asked.

"We have lost the entire Aregis continent. We lost contact with all of our cities, strongholds, and the devils who were staying there." The black-robed figure spoke, making the leader's eyes widen slightly. He then gritted his teeth in frustration.

He had already expected this to happen, but he did not think it would happen this quickly. With the power of the invaders, he knew that the Aregis continent and its surroundings would fall sooner or later. However, he did not mind too much that those cities and fortresses would fall, since at the very least, they would hold the invaders for some time.

In the meantime, the devils could mobilize their own forces and gather to plan a counterattack. Although their overall quality in terms of cultivation stage was lacking compared to the invaders, because most of the higher-ups of the devils went with Rulleus—he believed the devils' numbers were still overwhelming.

The fact that there were still many places the invaders had not attacked was a clear sign of it. With their overwhelming numbers, the devils could still do something against the invaders, even though it would require many sacrifices.

He would not let those invaders from the central star cluster take back this world and the others.

"The report has also finally come from the other continents. Our positions there have already been lost, and currently we have already lost more than forty percent of the territories in this world. We also received a more detailed report regarding the invaders' movement today."

"The invaders' movements are truly coordinated, and they are deliberately targeting known places where our troops are stationed. From this alone, we can conclude that they know important information regarding our strategic positions in this world from somewhere."

"There are two possibilities based on our guess. The first one is that, prior to this attack, someone from the central star cluster had already infiltrated the world and given information about it to the forces in the central star cluster."

"This possibility has a low probability because many of our troops did not sense any anomaly, even the smallest one in the past. There was no foreign object that came from outside the world," the figure said, pausing slightly.

"The second possibility is that there were traitors among us, and it is not someone with a low rank. With how those invaders could even sweep our hideouts, the traitor must be someone who knows all those places. This is the highest probability because we connected it to the unknown fate of His Highness's troops that went to the central star cluster." The leader narrowed his eyes and thought for a moment.

"How about the news from the other worlds?" he asked.

"The situation is not looking good. They keep losing, and earlier today we received information that even Red Lotus World and Orcus World have already had more than fifty percent of their worlds taken by the invaders. The situation might be worse as we speak, because of the time difference," the figure answered.

"The reinforcements that came to help also can't do much because they had to face many strong cultivators from the invaders. They truly brought many powerful cultivators

from the central star cluster. It is as if all the famous characters from the central star cluster have come to the fallen star cluster."

The leader massaged his temple after hearing it. The situation had turned much worse than he expected.

Even at this moment, he still did not understand the truth behind the entire situation—how those bastards from the central star cluster could suddenly attack them. Were Rulleus and all the ones who departed to the central star cluster already defeated, and was that the reason these invaders could attack them?

If that was the case, was Rulleus still alive, or was he already dead? Or maybe he managed to escape?

With them defeated, was that also the reason why the invaders seemed to know the crucial information regarding their world? Did they obtain the information from the devils they managed to capture?

What about Xarz, their leader? Why was his soul lamp the only one still showing that he was alive? Where was he at this moment?

Suddenly, a thought came into his mind and made his face turn solemn.

'What if Master Xarz is the one who gave the information to them? What if, at this moment, he has actually become a prisoner, and they kept him alive, which is why he is the only one still alive now?'

If that was the case, then there was nothing they could do. Every place and every secret was known to Xarz as the leader of the devils in this star cluster. With the absence of most of the devils' higher-ups, this star cluster that had been under the devils for many generations would eventually fall into the hands of the cultivators from the central star cluster.

But then he took a deep breath. This was still his assumption based on how things were going. Still, although it was only an assumption for now, it still had a basis.

'Our disadvantage is our number of high-ranking cultivators at the pseudo-immortal stage and the lack of information,' the leader thought.

'Moreover, I still do not know whether that man called Aldrian the Great has also joined the invaders. If he joined, then this will become a much more difficult war. We still do not know what his real capability is, and the information about him is still too little.'

After thinking for a few moments, he looked at the figure.

"We must gather information about the overall strength of those bastards first. I want to know just how powerful their force is and who is in charge of them. With their coordinated attack, I doubt they do not have any true leader among them."

"I want you to send recon groups to the enemy's encampment. Spread them out and look for that information. Also look for information about the fate of Master Xarz and the presence of the one called Aldrian the Great among them—whether he has joined this war or not."

"Yes, my lord," the figure answered. He was about to leave, but then he remembered something.

"Well, regarding the one named Aldrian the Great, I don't know if this information has any connection to him or not, but it came from a few survivors who escaped from some of the cities and strongholds in the Aregis continent. At this moment, some of them even want to escape to other worlds using interstellar vessels. They think that we cannot win this war," he added.

"They said the cause of their quick fall was someone's technique,"

"Someone's technique?" the leader asked with a frown.

The figure nodded. "Yes, their testimonies are the same. It was someone's technique. The moment they escaped, they saw from afar their base suddenly being rained down on by countless swords from space. Each sword carried the power of a peak pseudo-immortal stage strike. When those rains of swords descended, there was nothing they could do. The barrier formations were useless against them."

"They could only watch as our fortresses and cities were razed to the ground in no more than twenty seconds."

Hearing that, the leader's heart trembled.

"I think with that kind of power, that technique might have been unleashed by Aldrian the Great. From the rumors, isn't it said that he was the strongest cultivator who could push back against a god? Then he might be capable of unleashing that kind of technique," the figure continued.

The leader took a deep breath and remained silent for a few moments before nodding.

"Good information. Now you can leave."

"Yes, my lord." The figure then left the room.

Left alone, the leader narrowed his eyes as he thought about what he needed to do in the future. He felt pessimistic about the fate of the fallen star cluster. It seemed that this

time, the fallen star cluster truly would fall into the hands of the cultivators from the central star cluster.

After thinking for a moment, he finally made a decision. His face grew solemn, but there was also fear in it as he imagined the reaction of that man if he learned about the situation of the fallen star cluster. The decision he reached was that he had to report everything to the headquarters in the central region of Heaven.

That meant the Vampire King would know that the fallen star cluster was about to fall into the hands of the enemies.

With him knowing, he would undoubtedly send his troops. If that happened, there was no way the cultivators from the central star cluster could hold them off. The event that happened three million years ago would repeat.

He did not know if Aldrian the Great could battle many troops from the central region of Heaven, but at the very least the others would be overwhelmed not only by numbers but also by the overall power.

The devils from the central region of Heaven were different from the ones in other places. Not only were they numerous, but many of them were truly strong. Many could battle across levels even while still in the pseudo-immortal stage.

However, the problem was what kind of fate would await him if he told the Vampire King about it.

If the Vampire King became angry, only a horrible death would be waiting for him. That man was someone who could kill anyone simply because he was bored or even slightly irritated. The Vampire King might see this as the incompetence of the devils here and execute him once the war ended.

Still, he thought that it was better to tell the king. He could not escape anyway, because the Vampire King would know where he was no matter where he went.

Moreover, the fate of Rulleus might redirect the king's focus to Aldrian the Great rather than dealing with him out of irritation.

'Yes, let's do that,' he thought.

It would create another chaos, but at the very least he could keep his life.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 871 - 871: The Confidence of the Aster Empire

[ 1,539 words ]

On the next day, Aldrian and all the troops from the Aster Empire gathered outside of the headquarters. Near them stood their interstellar vessel, and from the looks of their attire, they were ready for another battlefield.

Only the forces from the Aster Empire were gather here, since the others already had their own targets. From the outside, the composition of the Aster Empire's troops was not impressive and could even be considered pathetic.

The strongest beside Aldrian was Pope Claudius and Venerable Karma Seeker, who was at low pseudo immortal foundation stage. The others were below that, and even the number of emperor stage cultivators was below fifty. With this kind of force in a war of the current scale, they would certainly face death the moment they reached the battlefield.

Some of their opponents would already be at the pseudo immortal establishment stage, and even at the pseudo immortal stage.

However, despite their pathetic average level of cultivation, there was no trace of inferiority on their faces. There was also no one who dared to mock or underestimate them.

All of their expressions instead held confidence. Even at this moment, they showed pride as their gazes were all directed toward Aldrian, who was standing on the small boulder. He was the main source of their pride and confidence.

"Let's go, there are many battles that we need to win," Aldrian said as he then walked toward the vessel, followed by the others.

Today, they would expand more of their territories to kill the devils. The Aster Empire got a share to attack a town in the far east. From the information they had, that town had a peak pseudo immortal establishment stage devil residing there.

After they entered the vessel, it floated and flew toward their destination. Their journey using the vessel was not long, only thirty minutes before they stopped not far from the town.

From the control room, Aldrian could see many devils guarding the town, stationed on the town's defensive wall. They saw the vessel's arrival, so they immediately became busier, and Aldrian noticed that they did not even try to actively attack. The devils instantly raised the barrier formation that protected the town.

It was as if they were trying to preserve their strength as much as possible by using a defensive mode. They used the same tactic as the other places, as if they were trying to stall for time in the face of their fall.

Aldrian smiled when he saw this, and he left the control room, heading toward the hall where his troops had gathered. As he arrived in front of them, all of their attention returned to him.

"Alright, be careful out there. Watch your friends, watch whoever is nearest to you, protect each other. You can battle to your heart's content, but be careful with friendlies. You don't have to worry about enemy cultivators at the immortal transition realm, you only need to fight what is in front of you," Aldrian said. He showed his smile.

"Happy hunting, ladies and gentlemen."

"UWOOO!" the others shouted in unison before the hatch beside them slowly opened. Aldrian looked at the opened hatch. For him, this battle was nothing more than a little sport. He could kill all the devils in this town easily on his own.

However, for these people, this battle was an experience. It would be different from the battles in the past week. They would fight with their own strength, the strength of the Aster Empire alone without support from outside powers. They would face opponents much stronger than them with only their power.

This battle would be good "training" for them, and Aldrian would help them grow stronger. He had already helped his troops by distributing cultivation resources so they could grow much quicker. Now he could provide them with the chance to train without worrying about opponents that were outside of their league.

As the hatch fully opened, all of them stepped out and instantly formed their formation. After they were done disembarking, the vessel began to float again and flew higher and higher until they could no longer see it.

The vessel continued rising until it reached the upper atmosphere, where it stopped and waited in case the ground troops needed support, and from there they could attack using the beam cannon.

Aldrian and his troops observed the town. Aldrian could see the devils looking at them with confusion, and he even noticed many devils showing relief. He couldn't help but smile, because he knew exactly what they were thinking at this moment.

They must have underestimated his troops the moment they sensed the average cultivation of his people. With this level of strength, there was no other purpose except becoming cannon fodder. The only thing that still held the devils' attention was the interstellar vessel.

However, with only one interstellar vessel, that was still not enough if they wanted to break the town's barrier. The conclusion in the devils' minds was simple. Even if they did nothing, they would undoubtedly be safe. They only needed to take care of the many weaklings who seemed suicidal enough to attack them with only such power.

Aldrian did not care about the gazes the devils directed at them as he gave his order.

"Move forward."

All troops moved in a disciplined manner and quite fast. In no time, they would likely reach the wall.

The devils who saw the troops approaching finally reacted. The strongest devil cultivator here, at peak pseudo immortal establishment stage, looked at the incoming troops with a mocking expression from the wall before giving his order.

"Send two middle pseudo immortal establishment stage to take care of the lone pseudo immortal establishment from the enemy. Send another six pseudo immortal foundation to take care of the rest of them."

"Yes, my lord," one of the devils replied before he ran off to execute the order. The leader kept watching the approaching troops.

But then his sight caught Aldrian unsheathing his sword. The sword in Aldrian's grasp was not his Sword of the End, but another divine-grade sword. Aldrian lifted the sword and pointed it at the sky. The devil leader did not change his expression. Although Aldrian held a divine-grade sword, that still did not change the outcome. He would not be able to shatter the barrier.

That man might be able to resist the incoming devils for a moment, but that was it. He was only a low pseudo immortal establishment cultivator. The two devils he had sent were more than enough to take care of him.

He saw that a few of his men had already stepped out of the town's barrier to carry out his orders. They were approaching the incoming troops.

His gaze returned to Aldrian, but then froze as a sudden blinding light shone from the sword. The blinding light shaped itself into a pillar that reached the heaven, piercing through the clouds and sweeping them aside. Every devil's expression froze the moment they saw the golden pillar of light forming from Aldrian's sword.

Their expressions changed from mocking or indifferent to shock. Their shock then shifted to horror as they sensed the power contained within the golden pillar. It was as if they were standing before a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator unleashing his technique.

The devils who were already outside the barrier stopped their advance as their heads lifted toward the sky, instinctively wanting to see the tip of the golden pillar.

Their gazes then lowered again, looking at Aldrian, who at this moment showed his smile to them. Without any warning, Aldrian swung his sword downward, causing all of them to try to escape to both sides. The golden pillar struck the town's barrier and created a dull sound.

The barrier received the direct impact from the pillar, and it instantly created a giant ripple that spread across its surface. The devils saw that the town's barrier had already begun to be overwhelmed by just one strike. From the point of impact, a giant crack formed and spread across the barrier that protected the town until—

Crash!

With the crashing sound, the barrier shattered under the sword strike, making the devils' hearts tremble and their eyes widen in shock. The moment the barrier shattered, the golden pillar continued downward and finally struck the town's defensive wall as well.

Rumble! Whoozh!

The wall that was hit by the pillar was instantly destroyed, and the town at this moment split into two sides. The golden pillar created a long crater that cut through the town and killed many devils who were caught in its path.

The devils who finally snapped out of their shock immediately arranged themselves to prepare for battle. They knew they had underestimated the enemy far too much. There was actually a cultivator at the pseudo immortal stage!

They had been fooled into thinking there were no strong cultivators among the enemy, yet the enemy had someone who could unleash something like that. They had already heard news that someone on the enemy's side was strong enough to destroy a city's barrier with ease.

The story of the rain of swords was already known among them.

Now, seeing a technique that could destroy the barrier so easily, they wondered if the figure they had heard about had actually appeared here.

After striking the town, the golden pillar disappeared. Aldrian sheathed his sword and finally gave his order.

"Attack!"

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 872 - 872: Their Battle

[ 1,615 words ]

After the order was given, the Aster Empire's troops did not hesitate to charge. The emperor stage cultivators had already chosen their targets, and they swiftly moved toward them. The others continued their advance in battle formation toward the destroyed wall.

Aldrian also did not stay still as he helped his people fight. Since he had already created his domain here, he killed all the devils he thought were outside his people's capability to defeat.

The devils that had earlier come out from the barrier to face him and the others were now trying to escape, but Aldrian did not let them. He immobilized them and then killed them using heavenly lightning. The rumbling sound of the lightning followed as their bodies turned to ashes, and he did not stop there.

The heavenly lightning turned into strand-like shapes of dragons and targeted cultivators above middle pseudo immortal foundation. He also killed some low pseudo immortal foundation devils to ease the troops' burden, as the number of pseudo immortal foundation devils was still too overwhelming for his people.

The dragon lightning strands wreaked havoc in a directed manner, targeting only specific enemies, and it horrified many devils. The lightning moved like serpents with their own will, weaving through the battlefield and avoiding anyone who was not their target.

At this moment, Sect Master Ryu, Sect Master Kang, and the other leaders of the major territories had already reached the wall and were fighting several of the devils.

The devils also did not let themselves be killed easily. Although they were shocked and afraid of Aldrian's power, they would not let themselves fall without a fight.

Boom!

Sect Master Kang's fist collided with the fist of one of the devils. Sect Master Kang had already reached the peak emperor stage, and so had his opponent. However, it was clear that the devil was the one being pushed back. His body slid slowly, and a grimace of pain showed on his face.

Before the devil could be pushed back any further, another devil with the same cultivation level attacked Sect Master Kang. This devil used wind laws, shaping them into a blade from afar. But before the attack could reach Sect Master Kang, an invisible arrow suddenly pierced the devil's head, causing it to explode instantly and killing him on the spot.

Emperor Ladwin, using his divine-grade bow artifact, provided support from afar. He shot arrows toward the devils that tried to overwhelm them with their numbers. The number of emperor stage devils was much higher compared to their own force, after all.

He needed to make sure that no devil could endanger his comrades who were battling at the front.

Venerable Karma Seeker was also showing his brilliance. With a Buddhist chant and the giant avatar of a golden Buddha, he struck with a palm attack toward the many devils that gathered to face him.

The giant Buddhist palm strike created chaos as its powerful force was unstoppable, even when the devils used a battle formation with an avatar. The Buddhist palm destroyed the avatar created from the combined strength of ten emperor stage devils.

Venerable Karma Seeker's avatar did not stop as he sent another attack toward the devils that tried to overwhelm him with numbers. The devils continued to attack him with various techniques that constantly hit his avatar, yet his avatar was strong enough to withstand the repeated bombardment of elemental laws.

Venerable Karma Seeker then formed a mudra, and his avatar followed. A moment later, the avatar's mudra shone with a bright light before unleashing a pillar of light that destroyed everything in its path.

The light evaporated any object in front of it, especially the devils below the pseudo immortal foundation stage. The holy energy of Buddha was truly one of the devils' banes, as it was an opposing force similar to the holy energy used by the church.

As if not wanting to lose to Venerable Karma Seeker, Pope Claudius also showed his skill. With a spear in his hand, every sweep of his movements killed devils and destroyed the land for hundreds of meters. Any devils that tried to gang up on him were instantly killed by the powerful strikes of his spear.

His holy aura burst forth with such force that the devils hesitated to approach him. Not far from him was King Raymond, unleashing his lightning technique. The lightning wreaked havoc across the battlefield and destroyed many of the city's structures.

Not far from him, King Herman and King Durand were also battling, while King Douwin and Sect Master Baek created chaos from behind the enemy lines. With Aldrian protecting them from much stronger cultivators, they were unstoppable.

The other troops finally entered the city and began attacking any devils they could find. Angelica and Baek Jimin were near each other, with Angelica casting her techniques to support Baek Jimin and the nearby troops.

Aldrian, who observed all the battles from the sky while giving support, nodded. At this moment, he had already grasped another artifact from his storage ring. This time, he used the Earth Shattering Bow.

The battle's progress looked good. He was also doing another task by preventing any devils from escaping.

His gaze and senses picked up any devil that tried to move in the opposite direction from the battlefield, and he killed them by shooting wind-slashing arrows. His arrows always hit their targets even when the devils were already far away.

His gaze caught several devils flying toward the opposite direction. He pulled the bowstring with two arrows on it and—

Whoosh!

The arrows flew toward the escaping devils. As if they had consciousness, they pursued their targets and pierced them right through their heads, exploding them. The two arrows did not stop after piercing their targets and instead moved in another direction. They were now targeting other escaping devils.

Aldrian controlled the arrows with his mind and successfully killed several more before the arrows lost their power and returned to his hand. Aldrian grasped the returning arrows and instantly turned his gaze toward one direction.

In another area, behind the devils' line, there was another chaos. In this part of the battlefield, the situation looked even more brutal and chaotic compared to where Sect Master Ryu and Sect Master Baek were.

For most people who saw the scene here, they could only see devils' bodies suddenly being cleanly cut by something invisible. There was nothing to see, yet devils' bodies were suddenly sliced apart in different places.

Most of the devils had their heads decapitated, while others had their bodies split in half. The devils that tried to block whatever was striking them felt despair because they could do nothing about it. Their bodies were suddenly severed without them even seeing what had attacked them.

Even devils at the pseudo immortal foundation stage seemed to have difficulty seeing the strikes.

Aldrian, who saw it, felt amazed. With his eyes, he could clearly see the one responsible for this horror. Xin Haotian, with his light laws and speed of light, showed his brilliance. The devils were powerless against the speed of light and Xin Haotian's swordsmanship.

Not only were his strikes fast, but each sword strike contained tremendous power, instantly killing each devil with a clean cut. Xin Haotian targeted fatal parts of their bodies to make sure he killed the devils. The rate at which he killed them could be counted as ten devils per second.

He never stopped and was always on the move, which made the devils at the pseudo immortal foundation stage who tried to pursue him unable to catch him. He was too fast and too unpredictable. Only the severed bodies of devils were left in his trail, making the devils truly angry and frustrated.

This was the first time Aldrian saw Xin Haotian fight for real, and it was as expected from the genius who had already been hailed as the strongest swordsman before his appearance. Xin Haotian's way of killing was truly effective, fast, and powerful.

He then saw Xin Haotian suddenly activate his domain. The moment he activated his domain of light, a blinding light appeared for a moment before the domain disappeared. When the domain vanished and revealed what had happened inside, Aldrian raised his eyebrows.

Aldrian saw that every devil inside the domain was already dead, their bodies split in many places. More than a hundred devils died in that short moment of blinding light. Even one devil at the pseudo immortal foundation stage was killed, and another had his right arm severed.

Xin Haotian was already standing in front of the injured devil with his sword pointed at the devil's neck before he slashed and decapitated him.

Aldrian was truly impressed by what he sensed from Xin Haotian's domain. Just like any other domain, the moment Xin Haotian activated it, he became far more powerful and terrifying.

However, for someone like Xin Haotian who was already overwhelmingly powerful, his domain was a nightmare for his enemies. His speed, which was already difficult to follow, grew even faster, and within that short span, he killed all the devils inside his domain with his sword strikes.

As Aldrian continued observing Xin Haotian and the battlefield, he suddenly sensed someone launching a surprise attack from below him. A red mist quickly grabbed his feet and tried to drag him down to the ground, and at the same time he felt the blood in his legs turn chaotic.

Aldrian looked below and saw the red mist coming out from nowhere. It was as if the red mist appeared from the void of space, and from the sensation in his feet he instantly understood what had happened.

'Blood laws, this devil is trying to burst my feet,' he thought.

But then he smiled.

'Let's try my knowledge then. I've never used it before, so this is a good time to test it.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 873 - 873: Quick Conquests

[ 1,588 words ]

Aldrian looked at his feet, which he could feel were being grasped by the red mist. He was pulled toward the ground, and he could feel the blood flow in his feet becoming chaotic. It was as if the blood inside his feet was trying to burst from every vein.

Aldrian thought that this devil was trying to incapacitate him by bursting the veins in his feet so it would hinder his movement.

But Aldrian's expression did not show much change. This devil wanted to control his blood and burst his veins? That was something he could not do.

He knew which devil was doing this to him, and he knew that with that devil's level, there was no way he could do any harm to him. He could try to control the blood flow inside Aldrian's feet, but that was the most he could do. His veins would not burst because the blood laws from this devil were not strong enough.

Without much effort, he returned the favour by trying something new as well.

Blood laws were one of the laws he had comprehended after he absorbed many of his past followers' comprehension. Some of them had comprehended blood laws, and they were more powerful than anyone from this heaven.

Although he could not entirely absorb their comprehension and use many of their technique because of his cultivation limitation, it was enough to shape his foundation in mastering many laws.

But, although he had comprehended them and could use their laws, he did not use most of them. He simply thought that he did not need to because what he had currently was already enough. He would use any of them only if he thought he needed it.

Now that there was a chance for him to try blood laws, he would try it. He focused his mind and tried to trigger his blood laws. As he grasped the sensation of control over the blood laws, he then struck back.

'Blood curse.'

This was the technique he had comprehended from his past followers and could use at this moment. The red mist that seemed to grab his feet suddenly trembled and then dispersed. In the place not far from him, a devil suddenly shouted in agony as if he had just received great pain.

"Argghh!"

The devil was actually hidden using his concealment technique between the buildings in the town. His figure became visible as he shouted, grabbing his head and writhing on the ground like a worm that touched a grain of salt. This devil was actually the strongest devil here, the one who took charge of this place.

His body spasmed and blood started to flow from all of his body's orifices. His eyes turned red and blood flowed from them as well. The veins on his body became visible and his entire skin turned red. Although he was a vampire who had comprehended blood laws, ironically the blood in his body was the very thing torturing him.

He felt excruciating pain throughout his entire body, and even his soul was affected as it turned red like blood. The blood inside him had turned into the medium of a curse that would give him extreme pain until his death.

This was a terrifying curse technique that could strike the target as long as the caster was connected to the target through something. With this devil using his blood laws technique on Aldrian, he had already made himself the target of this curse.

The devil wanted to withstand the pain, but he did not know how. The agony inside his body intensified to the point where he could not think of anything except the pain. His body kept convulsing for a moment until it finally stopped.

The devil died in a dreadful way, his body drenched in blood. Even in death, his expression showed extreme pain.

For this devil who was only at the pseudo immortal establishment stage, there was no way he could withstand the blood curse from Aldrian.

After killing the strongest devil here, Aldrian then returned his focus to the battlefield. His troops had already taken more than half of the town, and there were no casualties. He continued what he was doing, killing any escaping devils and helping cover his troops when they encountered a strong opponent.

As time passed, the devils' numbers kept dwindling until they were pushed to one side of the town. The devils were trapped, with the town's defensive wall behind them while Aldrian's troops kept pushing forward. Even if the devils tried to escape past the wall, Aldrian, who was watching from the sky, would instantly kill them.

There were no more than a hundred devils left, and all of them were like fish on a chopping board, waiting to be killed. As if knowing their end was inevitable, these devils then decided to commit suicide by blowing up their dantian.

Aldrian, knowing what they would do, wanted to make a move, but before he could do anything to those devils, blinding light shone over the surrounding area. The moment the light receded, the devils were already dead, their bodies severed into many parts. Xin Haotian was already standing among the corpses with a bloodied sword in his hand.

His breath was slightly shallow as he showed his fatigue after battling many devils and using his domain again. He took a deep breath and looked at the sky where Aldrian was before lifting his sword and cleaning the blood off it by sweeping it hard to the side.

Aldrian smiled when he saw this and shifted his gaze in another direction. His troops had already stopped their movement the moment they saw the blinding light and the dead devils. They knew the battle in this town was finally over.

"Good job to all of you! Now you could take a rest without worry. Enjoy your resting time as best as possible because we will continue our battle in another place later. I will spread energy replenishment pills for you, and we will depart after all of you replenish your energy entirely." Aldrian shouted, which made the troops sigh before they began looking for a place to rest.

Normally, after a battle, the troops would check the place they occupied for any devils or any things they could take as spoils of war. They would also check if there were any dangerous things in the area to prevent unnecessary accidents.

However, for Aldrian and his troops, they would not do that this time. Before departing, they had already agreed with Aldrian's method in their battles. They would carry out what he called "quick conquests", which meant they had to conquer a number of places in one day.

Because they had to move fast, they would have to skip some procedures regarding the aftermath of the battle, just like now.

To do that, Aldrian had already prepared many pills to return his troops to their perfect condition after each battle. If their energy was depleted, he gave them energy replenishment pills. If they were injured, he gave them healing pills.

Today, their targets were three places where the devils gathered, two towns and one fortress. If they kept their speed of conquest like this, then they would meet other powers of the Ancient Blue Gate World in the far east in no more than five days.

The other powers were also expanding their territory, so they would undoubtedly meet each other, and that was part of their plan. The devils' room for movement would become narrower and narrower until they were forced to gather at one point in the future.

At that time, they would finally liberate this world from the devils.

After resting for two hours, Aldrian and his troops finally continued their conquest journey. Aldrian made the entire town they had just taken into his domain, so there would be no problems in that place.

That was also one of the reasons he dared to bypass the aftermath procedures of the battle. With his domain, he could make sure that there were no problems in any place they had already conquered.

Aldrian and his troops later arrived at the next town, and just like the earlier town, they followed the same strategy. This time, their teamwork seemed even more solid, and it made the battle end much faster. The town fell in less than an hour after the battle started.

They then took another rest for the next two hours before departing for the fortress. This fortress was located on top of a hill, a very strategic place to build one. It would be easy to defend but difficult to attack.

They had already prepared for a fierce battle here, knowing it would be very different from attacking the towns earlier.

However, the moment they arrived, the fierce battle they expected did not happen. That was because the moment they reached the fortress, they discovered that it had already been abandoned!

But when they entered the fortress, there were already many signs that the devils who defended this place had planned this abandonment. There were no treasures, and some of the buildings had been burned to the ground. The barrier formation that protected the fortress was also broken.

The devils had destroyed many things before abandoning the fortress so the enemy could not utilize it.

They did not know where the devils were going. The devils might have escaped somewhere, or they might have made a tactical retreat to a gathering point that they still did not know.

But even though this was unexpected, they had already reached their planned targets for today and decided to stay in the fortress for the night. They would continue their advance tomorrow.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 874 - 874: The Peaceful Night?

[ 1,587 words ]

Night fell on the Red Mist Star, and Aldrian with his troops had already built their accommodation for the night inside the fortress. The fortress was located on top of a hill, surrounded by barren land that stretched to the horizon.

Normally, anyone who wanted to attack this place would be spotted by the sentries, which meant the devils would have time to prepare for defense. This made attacking the fortress extremely difficult, since the terrain provided a natural advantage and the troops inside could prepare accordingly.

The only way for opponents to strike this fortress was from space. However, that was also difficult, because they would most likely be spotted by the cultivators who patrolled the area above.

But once again, all of that applied only when conditions were normal. At this time, the devils did not have cultivators patrolling space. The fortress itself seemed abandoned in haste, and the battle the troops expected never happened. The devils simply abandoned this strategic fortress without fighting.

Aldrian, at this moment, stood on one of the fortress towers, looking at the night sky. He had already created his domain in this fortress, which caused the sky to slowly cleanse itself from the thick negative energy. The night sky was still darker than normal because of the mist and clouds, but it was getting better as time passed.

Aldrian looked at the crescent moon in the sky that still shone with a red hue in the midst of the clouds. While he kept his eyes on the sky, a woman suddenly approached him from behind and hugged him.

Knowing who it was, Aldrian simply smiled. Baek Jimin inhaled his scent for a moment before she commented,

"What a refreshing feeling. This is what I need the most right now."

Aldrian placed his hand on Baek Jimin's hands that were wrapped around him and gently pulled her so she stood beside him. He quickly gave her a kiss on the head before he wrapped an arm around her shoulder.

"Good work for today, dear. I saw that you are getting stronger, and you even unleashed some techniques that I saw for the first time. I'm really proud of you," Aldrian said.

Baek Jimin smiled and leaned her head against his chest.

"Well, thanks to Ancestor's help that gave me my transformation, my comprehension of the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture is getting much deeper, and I could unleash some techniques from the scripture that I initially did not comprehend. I just lucky."

"That was not luck," Aldrian said. "You could already comprehend the Heavenly Demon's Flower scriptures, so it was only a matter of time before you comprehended its entire content. The creator of the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture only helped you shorten the process."

"Still, the help from Ancestor is something I appreciate. Why do you seem to belittle her kindness to me?" she asked with a pouted face as she turned to look at him.

Aldrian smiled and looked into her eyes. "I'm not belittling her. What I said is simply the truth. You could comprehend the entire scripture if given enough time. That is your fate, since you already comprehended the scripture."

Baek Jimin's pout faded, and she finally showed a smile again as she leaned her head against his chest once more.

"My fate, huh? I suddenly remember how much I hated my fate for allowing me to comprehend the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture. I felt lonely and different, and my life turned for the worst," she said as she rubbed her head against his chest.

"But to think the fate I hated back then actually brought me to you and made me who I am today. I think the heavens finally gave me a huge fortune after everything I have gone through."

Aldrian stroked her head, kissed her once more, and hugged her tighter. They remained silent for the next few seconds, savoring each other's touch and company.

"By the way, I wonder why the devils abandoned this fortress? To think they simply gave up such a strategic place. Did they really abandon it, or are they planning something?" Baek Jimin asked.

"From the signs we found, they seemed to leave in a coordinated manner. They destroyed anything we could use, but there are no traps anywhere," she added.

"I don't know. But whether they escaped or are planning something, they will not get this place back. That is the good thing, since our work becomes much easier," Aldrian answered.

Baek Jimin nodded as she looked at the sky again. As they continued enjoying their time together, unknown to them, in an underground place quite far from the fortress, hundreds of thousands of devil troops were gathered. They filled a wide underground hall.

The only light in the area came from the torches held by many of them. All of them were already wearing their armor, prepared for battle.

The strongest among them was someone at low pseudo immortal stage. He was the commander of the devil troops here. He was a middle-aged man with short black hair and a slashed scar across his lips. He stood with his eyes closed as if waiting for something. His troops said nothing, and all of them waited for their leader with tense expressions.

After a few minutes, a silhouette suddenly appeared beside the leader and formed into the shape of a man in a black robe.

"It's time. We haven't seen any suspicious movement from the fortress, at least from afar. We cannot approach it because we fear alerting the enemies," the black-robed man said.

The leader opened his eyes and took a deep breath.

"I see," he said, then looked at his troops. "Then let's move. We will give them a surprise. Remember our objective is to dwindle their numbers. We have to kill as many as possible. If we can kill their leader, then all the better, but I am not expecting too much. From what I know, their leader is someone at the peak pseudo immortal stage in disguise."

"Is that clear?"

"Yes, my lord!" his troops replied in unison, which made the leader nod. They then began moving through the underground passage. Most of them were devils who had comprehended the earth laws, allowing them to control the earth easily. At first, they moved quickly toward the fortress, moving through the ground as if they were moles.

However, as they drew closer, their speed gradually decreased and their movements became more careful. They opened the path with caution, making sure not to alert the troops inside the fortress.

This plan was made by the leader after he received the report that the town near the fortress region had fallen. The last communication he received stated that the invaders had reached the nearest town from their position, and based on the pattern, he knew the next target would be his fortress.

He had already heard that the invaders were extremely strong, and fighting them head-on would be useless, so he decided to use another approach.

A surprise attack.

They would abandon the fortress and make the enemy believe it had been deserted as part of a tactical retreat. He assumed the invaders would surely use the fortress as a place to rest. Even though he did not know whether they would continue their journey without staying long or remain there for the night, he still decided to use this strategy.

If they did stay the night in the fortress, that would be their chance to strike.

They gathered in the underground area far from the fortress to avoid the enemy's detection. This was to prevent the invaders from sensing them if they hid directly beneath the fortress. The leader knew that someone at the pseudo immortal stage could detect disturbances underground if they checked.

Even if they dug deep beneath the earth, there was still a chance that a pseudo immortal cultivator could sense them. It was safer to move quietly from a distant location than to risk alerting a strong enemy.

The only way to evade the senses of a pseudo immortal stage cultivator was to let them relax and believe nothing would happen in the fortress. That was the only chance to catch them off guard. This was why the devils waited for hours until night before making their move. The leader believed the invaders would lower their guard, and that would be the moment they could strike.

They would keep moving carefully until they reached the fortress ground and attack from within in a surprise assault. Although the pseudo immortal cultivator would eventually notice the attack, by then they would already be inside the fortress, creating chaos and killing many of the enemies.

After moving underground for an hour, they finally arrived beneath the hill. From there, they slowly moved upward toward the fortress ground.

Their movement was slow and careful, to the point that they did not create any disturbance in the surrounding soil. There was not even the slightest tremor that could

be sensed. The thousands of troops split into many paths, planning to emerge on the surface in multiple locations.

As they carefully moved upward toward the fortress, Aldrian was still enjoying his time with Baek Jimin. At this moment, they were already sitting at the edge of the tower, with Baek Jimin's head resting on his shoulder.

Their hands intertwined as they talked happily with each other.

However, Aldrian suddenly fell silent before a small smile appeared on his face.

'I see, so this is their plan,' he thought.

Baek Jimin noticed the change in Aldrian's expression and became confused.

"My dear, is there something wrong?" she asked.

Aldrian continued smiling as he answered her.

"Well, it looks like we have moles trying to destroy our peaceful night."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 875 - 875: Surprise Attack Attempt**

[ 1,588 words ]

In the fortress, the troops tasked with guarding were patrolling in many parts of the fortress. They were on the defensive wall or inside the fortress, patrolling between the still-standing buildings. The others who were not tasked with guarding were doing their own things such as cultivating or simply sleeping.

The situation was quite peaceful, allowing some people here to relax their mind after battling all day. However, the peaceful atmosphere of the troops was suddenly disturbed when Aldrian's voice transmission came to each individual.

"We have visitors. Prepare for battle, but don't make too much noise. Once all of you are ready, I want you to spread across the fortress to greet our visitors."

The moment the troops heard that, many stopped what they were doing and followed Aldrian's order. They knew Aldrian was not talking about normal visitors, and "greet"

here meant they would have to battle again. But they were confused about why Aldrian asked them to be quiet in their movements.

Aldrian then told the troops about the devils that were about to launch a surprise attack, which made the troops surprised, but it was still within their expectations. They knew the devils might be planning something when they saw the empty fortress. They were already prepared for anything the devils might do.

They had to move quietly so the devils in the underground would not detect anything strange on the surface and cancel their attack.

Aldrian guided his troops to several places where he thought the devils would appear on the surface. He could clearly sense the devils getting nearer, and he could guess where they would appear.

After more than fifteen minutes, the ground in many parts inside the fortress slowly opened, creating holes for the devils to come out. The devils did not instantly come out as they were checking the situation first.

Because Aldrian also ordered any light to be put out, the scene was really dark. However, the devils that saw this found nothing strange, as it might be one of the enemies' procedures to not use light while they were in hostile territory.

The devils could still see in the dark, and they found nothing strange when they only saw some of the guards moving here and there. They did not spread their spiritual sense so they would not alert the enemies.

After making sure there was no problem, the devils started to come out from their holes one by one. The leader also came out, but the moment he appeared he instantly sensed something was wrong. He stopped his movement and looked at the silent surroundings. He narrowed his eyes before suddenly widening them.

'Shit, this is a fucking trap!' he thought before he shouted.

"This is a trap! Destroy everything around you!"

However, his warning came too late, as the Aster Empire's troops were already attacking the devils that had already stepped onto the ground. The dark place was instantly lit up with fire elements and other elemental strikes.

The leader, who also wanted to strike with his mighty power at this moment, could not do anything. That was because right after he shouted, Aldrian had already teleported his body into his grasp and instantly fried his head using his heavenly lightning.

The leader, who did not expect to suddenly fall into Aldrian's grasp, could only feel pain spreading across his body, especially his head. He could not move, as his soul was

shaken greatly by the heavenly lightning strike. Moreover, combined with the golden energy, which was their weakness, it was the same as a curse for the devils.

Not even ten seconds passed before his resistance stopped, though his body still spasmed because the heavenly lightning was still flowing through him. The moment Aldrian stopped his attack, the devil leader's head had already turned into charcoal. With a slight grasping motion, his head instantly crumbled, and his body fell down from the sky.

Aldrian did not stop after killing the leader. He continued to attack the devils from the sky as he used his lightning laws. His strikes were precise, targeting the stronger devils who had middle pseudo immortal foundation cultivation and above.

The silent night became chaotic, and the devils who had already come out started being slaughtered here and there. They did not expect to be ambushed.

The devils still underground, knowing that their surprise attack had failed, decided to retreat.

"Fall back, fall back! We have been found out! We are being slaughtered out there!"

"Go back! Go back! Quick!"

Many devils urged their comrades behind them to retreat. Because their underground path was small, only large enough for one person to move in a line, those in front needed the people behind them to retreat first. If not, the ones in front would be stuck. That was why the foremost devils urgently told the ones behind them to retreat quickly.

Watching their comrades on the surface getting slaughtered, they knew it was only a matter of time before the enemies redirected their focus to the ones still underground.

True to the devils still in the underground's guess, their worry and fear became reality. The troops who had finished taking care of the devils on the surface switched their focus to the ones still underground. However, because of the narrow passage, they could not battle properly, as they could only attack the foremost devil.

There were still thousands of devils underground, and all of them started escaping much deeper into the underground and out of the hill area. This caused Aldrian's troops to feel frustrated because they could not do anything due to the terrain. They also could not pursue them individually, because that would be the same as suicide.

Individually, they would be weaker than these devils.

However, they then saw Aldrian appear beside one of the holes, and from his hand, a spark of flame appeared. The flame intensified with his golden energy, which made its heat grow hotter, and Aldrian used the power of his domain to make it much stronger.

The flame's colour slowly turned to blue, and it made the people near him step back. That was because even the heat alone gave them goosebumps, and they instantly started sweating just from the thought of getting close to it. The flame was enough to kill even someone at peak pseudo immortal establishment with ease.

"Everyone, take a distance from the holes!" he announced to his entire troops. They instantly obeyed his order and moved away from the holes where the devils had come out.

Aldrian then looked at the hole on the ground beside him and directed the palm that was still ignited with flame toward it. A moment later—

Whoosh!

The flame burst with great power toward the hole. A strong gust of wind was pulled into Aldrian's direction as the oxygen and the surrounding energy seemed to be sucked toward the flame to strengthen it. The flame instantly swept through the underground path at high speed.

The devil positioned at the forefront of the hole that Aldrian struck saw the sudden light coming from the surface. It happened so fast that he still had not registered what the light was when the flame swept through his body and the ones behind him. He only felt a sudden burning sensation and pain before his sight turned to darkness.

His entire being turned to ashes as the flame swept through him and continued behind him all the way to the deepest underground path. The flame filled all the paths, and it instantly came out of every hole the devils had created as passageways to the fortress. Pillars of blue flame burst out, making everyone cover their faces to shield themselves from the heat.

The flame in the underground paths killed thousands of devils in a short time, and it even filled the path leading outside the hill. In the distance, a rumbling sound of an explosion suddenly erupted as the flame burst to the surface.

This was the gathering place of the devils before they moved toward the fortress. The underground area collapsed, and the flame burst upward, and from the fortress the troops could see it in the distance.

After a few moments of unleashing his flame, Aldrian finally stopped and looked at the hole that was still slightly burning. He then heard a rumbling sound from deep underground and felt a slight tremor. The hole crumbled and closed itself as the underground paths collapsed. The rumbling and tremors continued for a few seconds until everything finally fell silent.

Seeing and sensing that nothing was wrong, Aldrian then gave his order.

"Good job, everyone. Now you can clean the aftermath of the battle. There are no devils that will disturb us for now."

The troops did as he said and began to spread out to clean the remnants of the battle. Aldrian then landed beside Baek Jimin.

"Those devils were really planning something, and thanks to you we could break their plan. I was truly amazed at how you could sense something deep underground even when you looked relaxed in front of me," Baek Jimin said with a smile.

"Well, what can I say? I just happened to have sharp senses, and you could sense it too if you reached my level," Aldrian replied. He would not say that the devils moving underground had entered his domain, which also extended beneath the ground and allowed him to detect them.

They continued to converse and enjoyed their time together after the devils' visit had disturbed them. For the rest of the night, there was no further disturbance until the sun rose.

Aldrian and his troops then continued their conquest journey an hour after the sun came out from the horizon.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 876 - 876: Trying to Seduce?**

[ 1,755 words ]

For the next four days, Aldrian and his troops battled many times and conquered eleven strategic places from the devils. That was something commendable, with six hundred thousand troops, they could take a large portion of the devils' occupied territory, and they did it without any casualties.

This was something impossible for other powers to achieve, and it had everything to do with Aldrian and his capabilities. Without Aldrian, even if his troops did not encounter a devil at pseudo immortal establishment stage or above, they would still suffer casualties.

His quick-processing mind and sharp senses, combined with his domain ability that heightened his situational awareness, allowed him to prevent any losses. As long as his troops were within his sight or sense, it was his responsibility to keep them alive.

Other power leaders would see this as a burden because they would have to take care of hundreds of thousands of troops on the battlefield. There was no way they could manage something like that, and in the end, they would have no choice but to let some of their people die for the sake of others.

However, for Aldrian, he did it because he could and because he wanted to. He did not see it as a burden, instead, he gladly treated it as one of his responsibilities. He had the strength and capability to do what others could not, and he intended to utilize it as best as he could.

It would be wasteful if he possessed such great power yet allowed any of his men to die simply because he considered taking care of them a burden.

After they seized another city from the devils today, they finally met another power from the Ancient Blue Gate World. They encountered a power from the Orian Continent, one of the strongest kingdoms on the Orian Continent, the Cerdian Kingdom, which was led by its queen herself.

The beautiful queen was a mature woman with long blue hair tied into a ponytail and wearing her special armor. Combined with the long sword at her waist, it gave her a deadly presence despite her beauty.

Aldrian's troops met the Cerdian Kingdom's troops at their temporary base, which had been built in the middle of the vast barren land. Aldrian was greeted directly by the queen herself, Revania Eysen Cavidon.

"Welcome to our temporary base, Your Majesty," the queen said as she slightly lowered her head.

"Oh, please, Queen Revania, you don't have to lower your head. As a fellow leader of our nation, you don't need to lower yourself to me. Just act normally since we hold the same status," Aldrian said as he offered a handshake.

Queen Revania smiled and accepted Aldrian's offer. "If that is what Your Majesty wants, then I will follow it. But I still feel it is something I need to do because Your Majesty is currently the highest commander of the alliance forces. I simply want to show the others the appropriate attitude toward Your Majesty."

Aldrian did not refute her further and simply nodded with a smile.

"Your Majesty, let us discuss the current situation. From this point on, we will have to fight together until we meet the other powers. I want to know what Your Majesty has experienced these past few days and how we can coordinate for the future battle," Aldrian said.

Queen Revania nodded. "Alright, then let us discuss it in the command tent. This way, Your Majesty."

Aldrian nodded. He also asked Baek Jimin to follow him, while the others would build a temporary base beside the Cerdian Kingdom's camp.

While Aldrian walked toward the biggest tent in the base, many troops from the Cerdian Kingdom looked at him with reverence. They could finally see, directly in front of them, the living legend himself. This was the man who had become the main character and the focus of the central star cluster in recent months.

The man who possessed power and achievements that no one had ever reached in the past.

Aldrian finally arrived at the largest tent located in the middle of the base. A large table stood in the center of the tent, and on it was a wide map showing the region they were currently in.

"How is your troops' situation, Queen Revania?" Aldrian asked.

"Overall, it is good, Your Majesty. We managed to seize many cities and strongholds from the devils according to the plan. We also did not suffer many casualties, which is really good. The only problem is logistics, since we need to spend more than we expected. But that is a small issue and still within our capability to handle," Queen Revania replied.

Aldrian nodded. "I see. Thank you for your hard work, Queen Revania. Although you currently have no major problems, please feel free to tell me if you need anything to support your troops."

Queen Revania smiled. "Thank you for the praise, Your Majesty. It is something we from the Cerdian Kingdom are supposed to do. And thank you, Your Majesty—if I need something, then I will surely tell you." She spoke while standing much closer to Aldrian, almost touching him. Her fragrance drifted toward him, and a flowery scent entered his nose, giving him a refreshing feeling.

She seemed unaware of it and instead turned her attention to the map on the table.

"Your Majesty, for our next target, we know that we will be aiming for this large city located near two fortresses. From what I know about this place, it was once the capital city of a kingdom, which explains its size and the tight security created by the two fortresses nearby. For us to attack, I think it would be best if we pincer them from three sides."

As the queen explained, she tucked her long hair to the side, revealing more of her smooth white neck to Aldrian. Baek Jimin, who stood to the side, watched the queen's behavior and could not help but frown.

However, as if he noticed nothing unusual, Aldrian simply replied to the queen's suggestion.

"That is a good suggestion, however that means we need to..." Aldrian continued explaining his opinion and planning the best formation for their attack. Baek Jimin, meanwhile, kept glancing at the queen's behavior beside Aldrian from time to time.

'Isn't she too close to Aldrian?' she thought.

The way she saw it, the queen's gestures seemed far too intimate. It felt as if the queen was showing a vulnerable side to Aldrian. And more importantly, she was like—

'Seducing him.'

However, Baek Jimin did not say anything and simply listened to their discussion in silence. She did not know if it was just her mind being too sensitive, which made her think this way, so she tried to keep a positive outlook. Maybe Queen Revania was not doing what she imagined.

But as the discussion continued, she saw the queen act even more boldly, her body repeatedly brushing toward Aldrian. Queen Revania behaved as if each touch was accidental, but to Baek Jimin, it looked deliberate.

As time passed, the queen grew even bolder with her actions. She showed her grace and beauty by releasing her ponytail. She even made subtle motions that emphasized her body curves—motions that would make any man lose focus and stir their desire.

Even though she wore armor, the armor clearly accentuated her curves. The part that revealed a portion of her thigh made the queen look undeniably sexy, and combined with her beauty, Baek Jimin doubted any man could resist being drawn to her.

'She is indeed seducing him. There is no doubt about it,' Baek Jimin screamed inside her mind.

She then glanced at Aldrian's expression. He did not show any sign of attraction or fluster. He looked calm and acted as if nothing had happened, focusing only on what they were discussing.

After more than an hour of discussing the plan and matters regarding the war, they finally finished.

"Alright, I think this is enough. Queen Revania, the plan is quite detailed, and I think there will be no problem. I will return to my troops, and tomorrow we can depart," Aldrian said.

"Alright, Your Majesty, please have a nice rest," Queen Revania said with a beautiful smile.

Aldrian and Baek Jimin then stepped out of the tent and walked outside the base camp. The sun was already near the horizon, and the scenery had turned slightly dark.

Once they were outside the Cerdian Kingdom's base camp, Baek Jimin instantly hugged Aldrian's arm tightly, causing Aldrian to raise his eyebrows before smiling warmly.

"What is it, my dear? You seem to be sulking?" he asked.

Sylphia looked at his face. "Are you really saying you didn't know? Or are you pretending not to know? I doubt you didn't notice it. About Queen Revania," she said with a slight pout.

Aldrian let out a small sigh along with a smile. "Well, to be honest, there is no way I could be oblivious to the signs Queen Revania showed me. I mean, even you saw through her—how could I not know what is inside her mind?"

Baek Jimin tightened her hug, pressing his arm even more between her breasts.

"That woman... how could she brazenly seduce you? Is she not afraid of you or anything like that? Does she not care about her image as an queen? As a noble woman?"

"Well, I think that is simply her effort. I heard Queen Revania never married. Many men in the past were drawn to her and proposed marriage, but she refused all of them. As one of the most beautiful women on the Orian Continent, she is confident in herself," Aldrian replied.

"When she sees someone who interests her, she tries to pursue him. In this case, it happens to be me, even if she needs to act that boldly," he added.

Baek Jimin sighed and gently pinched Aldrian's cheek.

"Sometimes I want to put a mask on your face so no woman can be seduced by you or get trapped in your charm. Once they fall into it, I don't think they can easily escape the image of your face."

Aldrian smiled, then took the hand pinching his cheek and kissed it.

"Well, what can I say? I was born with a handsome face and a high level of charm. This is the combination of my father's and mother's good genes. The important thing is that I never showed any interest in those women, right?"

Baek Jimin smiled. "What an arrogant scoundrel."

Aldrian suddenly leaned in, bringing his lips close to her ear.

"Well, this scoundrel will give you a gift tonight for your good work these past few days, so you'd better prepare."

Baek Jimin flushed at his words. She knew perfectly well what kind of gift he meant.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **- Chapter 877 - 877: Pleasure in the Basecamp (R-18)**

### **Chapter 877 - 877: Pleasure in the Basecamp (R-18)**

[ 1,625 words ]

Night had fallen, and the temporary base for the Aster Empire had already been completed. The base stood beside the Cerdian Kingdom's encampment, turning the area into a place where more than a million troops settled for the night.

The troops from the two nations interacted with one another, exchanging stories around the campfires while carrying out their guard duties. The atmosphere was amicable, and it naturally brought the two forces closer together.

For the troops of the Aster Empire, those who did not mingle with the others chose to stay in their tents and focus on their own activities. Many spent their time cultivating using the resources they had brought with them or received from Aldrian.

Others chose to sleep to rest their bodies and minds. This was especially common for cultivators much lower than the duke stage. Even though they received energy-replenishment pills after every battle, they still needed proper rest because they had not yet reached the level where physical and mental fatigue could be ignored.

However, there was also a couple engaging in an activity that was not common in an expedition like this.

Inside one of the tents, two people of opposite sexes were enjoying each other's touch with their bare bodies. Aldrian and Baek Jimin were kissing passionately. Baek Jimin lay on the large bed while Aldrian held her head as they kissed deeply.

She hugged his neck, their tongues battling inside her mouth, while Aldrian's other hand stroked her slit below to keep stimulating her. She was already wet, and his hard spear was already releasing pre-cum from the arousal he felt the moment he stroked her naked body.

His stick was already screaming to enter her pleasure hole, but Aldrian held himself back so they could enjoy their warm-up.

Smooching, erotic sounds echoed throughout the tent, though Aldrian had already blocked the noise using a formation. Without the soundproof formation, the sounds of their sex would be heard by many outside, and that was something he would never allow.

He had also set another formation that prevented anyone from entering the tent forcefully by using space laws. He didn't want anyone accidentally stepping inside and seeing Baek Jimin's naked body. He didn't care if someone saw him, but there was no way he would let anyone see his woman's body, even if it happened by accident.

The tent was protected by a spatial barrier strong enough that even a pseudo-immortal stage cultivator couldn't break through it. Aldrian would make sure nothing went wrong while they were having sex.

Aldrian finally pushed his finger into her pleasure hole and thrust it quickly. Baek Jimin wanted to moan, but his mouth and tongue blocked her from releasing any sound. The only thing that escaped her lips was a muffled noise.

His finger moved faster and faster, and after a moment he let go of her mouth so she could moan freely.

"Ah... ah... dear..."

He kept thrusting his finger while watching her expression. Her erotic face and the moans that sounded like beautiful music to his ears made his dick throb even harder. He looked at her beautiful naked body. First her neck, then her breasts, and finally her nipples. As if hypnotized by their shape and beauty, he touched her left nipple and pinched it.

"Ahh..." Baek Jimin's voice trembled as the stimulation hit her harder the moment he touched it. He could clearly sense that she was already close to coming. This was one of Baek Jimin's weaknesses, and he loved watching her reactions every time he played with her nipples.

"Angh... Aldrian... I can't hold anymore..." she said in heat.

"Just release it, dear... just release it," Aldrian whispered with a sensual tone as he leaned beside her ear. He then sucked on her neck while he stopped playing with her nipple. His finger continued thrusting, and finally—

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

Baek Jimin finally ejaculated. Her expression turned utterly erotic, her tongue sticking out and her eyes rolling back from the pleasure overwhelming her. Aldrian kept sucking her neck while she came and drenched his hand. Her body spasmed for a few moments, and Aldrian let her slowly gather her consciousness after the intense pleasure.

He stopped sucking her neck and looked at her erotic expression. She was still ejaculating, and the bed beneath them was already drenched.

After a few more seconds, she regained full consciousness after being brought to heaven. She gasped for breath as she looked at Aldrian, who smiled at her. Her face flushed, and her eyes widened slightly when she saw Aldrian bring his drenched hand toward his lips.

The hand drenched from her squirting was now right in front of his lips, and without hesitation he licked his fingers. The moment she saw it, her vagina tingled as another wave of arousal hit her despite having just ejaculated. He seemed to enjoy her liquid, and it was as if he wanted her to watch him lick and suck his fingers.

Aldrian then pulled his fingers away and smiled at her.

"It's truly delicious."

Hearing that, she couldn't help but spread her legs and look at him with an imploring expression.

"Dear, please... I don't think I can hold back anymore. I need your dick to satisfy me. Please ravage me and make a mess of me." She spoke with an erotic expression that made him widen his eyes slightly at how bold she was being. Usually Baek Jimin was the shy type in bed, someone who never said such direct, shameless words. For her to say something like that, with that kind of expression...

He wondered what made her change.

But he did not think any further. If she wanted pleasure, then he would give her pleasure.

He smiled and positioned his dick at her pleasure hole. He couldn't wait either, as his dick was already craving her. The moment the tip touched the lips of her hole, her body trembled. She looked at Aldrian's face hovering above her, seeing the slight sensual smile on his lips.

With one thrust, his spear quickly buried itself inside her, and her expression shifted into pure pleasure.

"Angh!" she moaned, her tongue slipping out as the overwhelming sensation hit her. Aldrian instantly caught her tongue with his lips as he kissed her deeply. He moved his hips and started pumping. The smooching sound from below mixed with the muffled noises escaping Baek Jimin's lips, which were blocked by Aldrian's kiss.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

His movement was getting faster and faster, and the pleasure kept growing for both of them. One of his hands was playing with her breast while his other hand pulled her neck so their kiss grew deeper. Baek Jimin was attacked on three fronts at the same time, which made her drown in pleasure.

She could no longer sense her surroundings clearly, what mattered right now was only Aldrian's pounding. His thrusts were stable, and she let him ravage her inside.

Aldrian finally released her lips after his tongue made a mess inside her mouth, and at that moment, her moan instantly escaped.

"Ah, ah, ah, ah, yes, yes, ah, more."

Pak! Pak! Pak! Pak!

His thrusts grew even faster, and both of his hands finally landed on her breasts as he played with both of them. He fondled them, pinched her nipples, and finally sucked one of them. He sucked her nipple hard, and her moans grew louder because of the stimulation. His tongue played with it and licked her areola aggressively.

With the combination of his pounding and his licking, Baek Jimin no longer knew any direction and lost all of her senses. Her sight grew slightly blurred, and she could only hold Aldrian's head while he enjoyed her breast. He kept pounding her for the next ten minutes before he finally sensed that Baek Jimin was about to come.

He fastened his thrusts for a few more seconds before finally—

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

She came again as her body trembled and his dick was drenched in her liquid. He kept his stick buried inside her while she continued ejaculating for a minute. In the meantime, he played with her breast, sucked her neck, or kissed her.

After a minute of ejaculating, her senses finally returned. She gasped for breath, slightly closed her eyes, and sweat was already dripping across her body. She looked tired, but then she turned her head to Aldrian and showed him a smile.

"That was really amazing, honey," she said softly.

Aldrian smiled and instantly kissed her lips. She also reciprocated his kiss and even stuck out her tongue for him to play with.

After kissing for a minute, Aldrian lifted his head and looked into her eyes.

"My love, let's continue, we still have a long night," he said.

Baek Jimin was slightly stunned, and she finally realized that his dick was still buried inside her. His dick was still hard as ever, and he still had not cum yet!

Before she could say anything, Aldrian had already changed their position.

Now she lay on her side with Aldrian behind her, still not releasing his dick, and he lifted one of her legs. After he thought the position was already good, he instantly thrust again, from slow to fast.

Pak! Pak! Pak!

"Angh, ah, ah, ah."

With this position, she experienced another kind of pleasure that was much different. She felt vulnerable, and the position truly made her feel at the complete mercy of Aldrian. She could only let Aldrian enjoy her body while she could not see him entirely.

She turned her head to look at him, and Aldrian also looked at her when their lips finally met. He kissed her while keeping his thrusts steady. His dick did not stop giving both of them pleasure.

However, while he was still indulging himself in the pleasure of Baek Jimin's body, he sensed someone approaching their tent. He continued kissing Baek Jimin and kept pounding her as he realized who was approaching, which made him sigh inwardly.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 878 - 878: Intense Feeling (R-18)

[ 1,572 words ]

Aldrian kept his thrusts as he sensed Angelica approaching the tent. He forgot that Angelica was staying in the same tent as Baek Jimin during this expedition. The tent they were using for sex right now was Baek Jimin's tent, and Angelica seemed to have already come back after visiting Pope Claudius.

It was his fault for devouring Baek Jimin while she was still inside her own tent. He just wanted to give her his burning passion as soon as possible and did not think about the place.

Baek Jimin also did not say anything, which made him forget about this fact. As he kept thrusting his dick, he thought that they needed to move to his tent to continue. But after thinking further, he felt they did not need to. He just did not want to stop his movement right now.

Angelica was almost at the tent, and she would crash into the spatial barrier.

"My apologies, Angelica. Would you mind staying in my tent for tonight? At this moment I'm inside your tent, and I have many things to discuss with Jimin, and I think it will take the entire night." Aldrian sent a voice transmission to her, which made Angelica stunned and stopped her right before she crashed into the barrier.

Angelica raised her eyebrows and looked at the tent in front of her. The tent was not showing anything from inside, which made her curious. She wondered what kind of discussion Aldrian and Baek Jimin had for them to need the entire night.

However, she did not ask anything more and simply nodded before turning her head toward the tent not far from her. The tent had slight differences compared to the other tents, as it was slightly bigger and was guarded by two cultivators from the Dark Saber group. Although the tent was vacant, the emperor's tent must always be guarded.

The two guards wearing black and grey robes looked at the approaching Angelica and intended to stop her, but Aldrian's voice transmission came to them.

"Let her in. She will stay for the night in my tent."

They were stunned, but they obeyed him. Angelica stopped in front of the two guards and opened her lips.

"His Majesty said that he is letting me stay in his tent for tonight, so I would like permission to pass."

One of the guards nodded. "Yes, Your Holiness. We have already been told by His Majesty. You may enter as you please."

"Alright, thank you" she replied with smile before entering the tent. Inside the tent, there was one bed, a small table, and three chairs. There was also a long table for placing things. Angelica observed the tent for a moment before she suddenly blushed. At this moment, she finally realized that she was inside the tent Aldrian stayed in for the night.

She did not think too much when Aldrian asked her to stay here, as she thought there was nothing wrong with it. But after entering the tent, she realized that this was the first time she had entered a private place where only he or Baek Jimin could enter.

This was the same tent used throughout the expedition, and the things inside were also the same. In other words, everything here was used only by him, and she might be the only one besides Baek Jimin who could stay here.

Angelica looked at Aldrian's bed, which was quite luxurious, before approaching it. She sat on the edge of the bed, which felt soft when her butt pressed against it. She then touched the bedsheet and stroked it as if she wanted to feel the softness of the bed, before leaning her head closer to the sheet.

She buried her head into the sheet and inhaled deeply.

'Aldrian's scent.' She thought before she acted more boldly. She glanced at the entrance of the tent for a moment before taking off her shoes and lying on the bed. She placed her head on the pillow and inhaled deeply, as if she lacked oxygen. There were two pillows, and she hugged the other pillow and inhaled it as well.

'This is where Aldrian places his head when he lies down.'

She stroked the pillow with her cheek a few times. Her expression seemed content as she smiled and closed her eyes, as if she was finally experiencing something she had longed for after so long.

'Aldrian, Aldrian, Aldrian.' She repeated his name inside her mind. She felt her feelings growing more intense after her talk with her father at that time regarding her emotions.

The fact that she finally accepted that her feelings for Aldrian were actually romantic slowly made those feelings grow even more. She did not know the reason, but it felt as if something inside her heart had found what it needed to feel complete.

She really could not hold the burning feeling inside her heart, and she simply let it keep growing. She just felt like it. She even started to imagine her future with Aldrian, the one she hoped for. She wanted to receive the same love from him as he gave Sylphia and Baek Jimin.

She wanted him to embrace her just like he embraced them. She wanted him to kiss her like he kissed them. She wanted to be like them...his woman who stood beside him.

Unbeknown to Aldrian, at this moment, her karmic thread connected to him turned much redder, and the change was truly drastic in a matter of seconds.

'Aldrian.' Angelica's mind seemed full of him at this moment as she let her body sink into the bed she believed Aldrian used. She imagined Aldrian lying on the bed exactly where she lay now. However, as she kept imagining him, something suddenly came into her mind.

'Wait, Aldrian and Jimin are together at this time... just the two of them. Aldrian asked me to stay here for tonight. Don't tell me...?' Her face blushed as she suddenly imagined their intimate picture. That was something she never thought would cross her mind, which made her feel truly different and filled with shame.

But then she imagined something else. She imagined Aldrian lying beside her at this moment, hugging her from behind with full tenderness, with full love. Then he would kiss her cheek and then her lips before he would undress her—

"Aahhh." Realizing what she had just imagined, she screamed in embarrassment as her face turned as red as a tomato. She rolled her body from side to side while hugging the pillow.

Angelica, at this moment, truly did not show her grace and dignity as a saintess, but acted as a woman in love with her girlish behavior. She could only show her true feelings in silence when no one was watching her.

After she calmed down, she stopped moving and looked at the tent's ceiling. She had made a mess of the bedsheet, but she did not seem to care. She was still hugging the pillow tightly, and her face was still blushing hard, but her mind finally started to clear.

She took a deep breath, lay on her side, and closed her eyes. Once again, she inhaled the pillow in her embrace and released a soft sigh.

'I'm truly a bad girl for thinking like this,' she thought. But she couldn't help it. Her feelings for him kept getting deeper, and she did not stop them. She took a deep breath and released it once more.

'Forget it... I'll just see where our relationship goes in the future. But I think I need to start showing my interest to him so he will notice me,' she thought, blushing as she hugged the pillow tighter.

While Angelica was still thinking about her feelings and what she needed to do in the future, the man she had feelings for was still pounding another woman. At this moment, Aldrian had already changed his position as he pounded Baek Jimin from behind, with

both of his hands fondling her breasts. His thrusts kept getting faster as he finally reached the edge.

"Dear, receive my cum," he said right beside her ear.

"Ah, ah, yes, yes, give it to me," she replied between her pleasure filled expressions.

His thrusts became faster and faster before he finally couldn't hold back anymore.

"Here..." he said before turning her head to the side so he could kiss her deeply as he pressed her body against the bed.

Spurt! Spurt! Spurt!

His cum filled her vagina, and he kept thrusting deeper so his yang essence would not spill. His face twisted in pleasure as he finally released his yang essence after pounding for so long.

At the same time, Baek Jimin also came, her face showing pleasure with her tongue sticking out. Their cum mixed inside her womb with nothing spilling out because Aldrian's dick had sealed her pleasure hole entirely.

He kept pressing his body against hers during his ejaculation as he continued injecting his cum for the next two minutes. Her womb was truly full, and when Aldrian was done, he finally pulled out his dick. The moment he did so, his yang essence instantly flowed from her slit.

Aldrian sighed in pleasure and looked at Baek Jimin's face, which still showed that she was in the heavens as her body trembled with the lingering pleasure. He smiled in satisfaction for being able to please his woman like this before deciding to take a rest for now.

He lay beside her and hugged her while she was still feeling the aftereffects of their release. He would wait until she was ready again.

The night was still long!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 879 - 879: The Change in the Queen?**

[ 1,555 words ]

On the next day, not long after the sun rose from the horizon, the alliance troops had already departed for their next targets to conquer. Three interstellar vessels flew in formation, passing through many terrains of the world.

Their targets were a big city and two devil fortresses near the city, which would be quite challenging if they attacked without a plan or without working together. The city was the most important place in this region, and once it was conquered, the devils would lose all of their influence here.

Aldrian was inside the control room of the vessel with Baek Jimin and Xin Haotian. Baek Jimin already looked fit despite Aldrian pounding her almost the entire night. In fact, before they departed, Baek Jimin could not even move an inch because of how tired she felt. Aldrian was truly like a sex machine who almost did not stop.

Thanks to his golden energy, she could quickly return to her prime condition. At first, she sulked because Aldrian had really tortured her with pleasure to the point where she thought she might actually die. She even started to think that if Aldrian made a long journey and she followed him, she would have to ask Sylphia to follow as well.

There was no way she could withstand his lust alone. She needed another woman to share the pleasure.

However, from their sex, Baek Jimin did not only receive fatigue and pleasure but also another great benefit. Thanks to their sex, which sometimes slipped into dual cultivation, her cultivation rose to the middle marquess stage and was even nearing the high marquess stage. If they dual cultivated again, she would undoubtedly make another breakthrough.

As they continued moving toward their destination, they finally saw their targets in the distance. One of the fortresses near the city could be seen with its high wall. Once the alliance forces saw this, one of the interstellar vessels spread out toward the other fortress located on the opposite side of the city.

They would launch simultaneous attacks toward the three locations at the same time. For Aldrian, he would attack the city directly while the two fortresses would be attacked by the forces from the Cerdian Kingdom.

Queen Revania agreed with Aldrian's arrangement because she knew Aldrian was capable of carrying out anything he suggested himself. To quicken the battle, he would also help destroy the barrier that protected the fortress.

Aldrian did not waste any time. The moment his vessel neared the fortress, Aldrian stepped out of the vessel, took out a sword, and used Pillar of Heaven's Judgment to destroy the barrier. The devils seemed to be expecting their arrival, so they were

already in position to defend themselves. However, the moment they saw the pillar of golden light rise into the sky and fall upon them, chaos spread. The barrier shattered, leaving them vulnerable to attack.

The troops from the Cerdian Kingdom who saw it were truly amazed, as the barrier that was extremely difficult to break was destroyed just like that. Queen Revania that also watched Aldrian in action once more, her eyes glimmered. No one knew what was going through her mind at that moment.

After destroying the barrier, Aldrian and his troops did not stop, and the vessel continued flying past the fortress toward the city in the distance. The city's defensive wall could already be seen, stretching across the horizon.

When they arrived, they saw the damaged and dilapidated city, although there were many devil movements inside. Its size was roughly the same as the headquarters they attacked for the first time.

The vessel then stopped not far from the city before the troops disembarked to create their formation. Aldrian floated as he observed the vast city. The barrier had already been erected, and he could not help but remain amazed at how extravagant the devils were with their resource expenditure. They covered so many places, even a city as large as this one, with barriers of the same quality.

He saw the devils forming their own defensive formations on the defensive wall and inside the city. Bells rang across the city to warn of the incoming invasion, and Aldrian's focus turned toward the strongest devils he could sense there.

Behind enemy lines, he saw a male devil with black hair, and this one was actually a pure human. The devil had cultivation at peak pseudo immortal stage, which was rare given the current condition of the devils in this world. He was one of few peak pseudo immortal stage experts left after many had left for the central star cluster.

There were also a few other pseudo immortal devils in the city, which did not surprise Aldrian because this was one of the most important cities for the devils. Looking at the composition of the enemies, Aldrian knew he had to take this more seriously if he did not want any casualties among his troops.

He then started by creating his domain while the devils looked in his direction with wary expressions. The strongest devil here stared at Aldrian. He had received information from many places that they were losing ground, and it was only a matter of time before the enemies arrived right at their gate.

He had also heard about a strong enemy who could destroy barriers easily, and now he finally saw him with his own eyes when Aldrian destroyed the fortress's barrier. The strong enemy was likely a pseudo immortal stage cultivator, but what he sensed from Aldrian was only pseudo immortal establishment stage.

This made the leader confused, but he did not dwell on it any further. The most important thing now was to defend the city.

Aldrian, after finishing the creation of his domain, looked toward the strongest devil and all of the devils' higher-ups. Their numbers were quite many, and he had to kill them fast so that his troops could begin their attack. The devils might escape, but at the very least, it would lessen the danger for his troops.

To kill many of the devils in one sweep, he knew he had to use a large-scale technique like Swords Apocalypse. He was not sure if there would be any devils left for his troops to battle if he used Swords Apocalypse, but that was far better than letting his men die.

As he prepared to create countless swords, he heard a rumbling sound and commotion behind him.

The commotion came from the fortress behind, where the forces from the Cerdian Kingdom besieged it. Queen Revania was with this force, and at this moment, she unleashed one of her techniques.

The sky above the fortress darkened, and the overcast almost reached the city. The rumbling of thunder echoed across the sky, with strands of lightning appearing here and there. Rain began to fall in the fortress, but the rain was actually sharp, hard, thin ice. The size of the ice shards was like needles, and they easily pierced anything below.

Many devils tried to defend themselves using nearby structures and their defensive techniques, but the needles pierced through and killed many of them. The only ones who could truly defend against it were devils at the pseudo immortal establishment stage and above. They were forced to protect the other devils who did not have the power to stop the attack.

The situation worsened when a strong tornado formed, accompanied by lightning, and it wreaked havoc throughout the fortress, destroying buildings. The wind turned sharp like blades, and lightning storms struck random places below. Anything that happened to be caught in the lightning turned to ashes.

"Retreat to the city, retreat to the city!"

"Nooo!"

The devils in the fortress did not stand a chance against the queen. She did not seem to hesitate as she unleashed one of her most powerful mass destruction techniques. From the looks of it, she might even be able to annihilate the entire fortress by herself if she wanted to.

Her troops even felt a shudder in their hearts as they watched their queen like that. She seemed different from usual, unleashing a technique that consumed a large amount of

her energy right at the beginning of the battle. They wondered what had happened to their queen for her to change her approach in battle.

But on the other hand, from this alone, everyone could see how vulnerable these devil strongholds were against the invasion of a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator if they did not have any barrier protecting them.

Aldrian nodded to himself, seeing that there was no problem with Queen Revania's presence. Now he needed to do his part.

In the atmosphere where his domain still reached, he had already shaped countless swords, all pointed at the city. He created the swords in the upper atmosphere so as not to alert the devils inside the city, minimizing their chance to escape. The devils did not realize that at this moment, high in the atmosphere, countless swords were already aimed at them.

The devils still watched his direction warily, preparing for any technique he might release.

As they kept their focus on him, they finally sensed something from the sky, and they could not help but feel shocked as the rain of swords suddenly descended upon the city. The strongest devil felt his heart tremble after sensing the rain of swords that finally reached the barrier.

It did not even take two seconds before the barrier collapsed and the apocalypse swept through the city.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 880 - 880: Long Distance Attack**

[ 1,684 words ]

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The rain of swords fell across the city and threw it into chaos. The devils could only try to escape the rain because blocking it was useless. Some of the devils who had reached the pseudo immortal stage did not have enough time to flee and were instantly obliterated by the swords.

Others managed to escape after decisively using their escape talismans and disappearing from their positions. This included the strongest devil among them, who chose to escape.

Seeing his target flee, Aldrian did not look disappointed. He had already expected it. That devil was outside his domain, and with that distance, he could not do much to him. Moreover, if a peak pseudo immortal stage existence truly intended to escape, it would be extremely difficult to catch them.

He could only make sure that devil did not return and cause trouble for the alliance troops.

After the Sword Apocalypse stopped, Aldrian flew toward the city while giving his order.

"Attack."

The troops instantly charged toward the defensive wall. Thanks to the Swords Apocalypse, many of the devils had been killed, and most of the wall had collapsed, opening a direct path into the city. There were actually devils who survived the apocalypse. They were lucky, and the size of the city also played a part.

The devils who had formed a defensive formation earlier had already fallen into chaos after most of their colleagues were killed. They scattered across the city in small numbers. There were also higher-ups at the pseudo immortal stage among them, and Aldrian would be targeting those first.

The Aster Empire's troops entered the city easily, and they had to push much deeper before they could find the surviving devils and engage them in battle. The devils' higher-ups saw that the Aster Empire's troops were already inside the city. However, they were not focused on them because Aldrian was right in front of them.

They gritted their teeth and chose to strike. They activated their devil forms and instantly attacked Aldrian with their elemental techniques. A giant swirl of flame shot out from one devil's hand toward Aldrian. The others unleashed their own attacks, including wind, lightning, and even space.

Aldrian evaded using teleportation and counterattacked at the same time. He did not hesitate to use his powerful moves, such as the combination of heavenly lightning and death laws. The moment these devils sensed the death laws, their souls trembled and they felt fear because, for the first time, they were facing pure death laws.

The devils attacking Aldrian almost lost the will to fight, yet they gritted their teeth and held on. They kept attacking, even using their weapon artifacts in an attempt to strike him. Some of them tried to get closer with their movement techniques to attack him directly.

However, Aldrian's figure, which at this moment resembled that of a thunder god, did not give them any chance to approach. He also used spatial techniques to make the lightning strikes appear right beside the devils.

Spatial cracks opened next to them, and the devils who did not expect the sudden appearance of those cracks were instantly electrocuted by the heavenly lightning. It happened so fast that the lightning appeared a split second after the spatial crack formed, giving the devils no chance to evade or escape.

The combination of heavenly lightning and death laws was truly overpowering, as the devils' bodies turned not only to ash but to complete nothingness. Their bodies disappeared from existence, down to the level of their molecules.

The only thing that remained of them was their souls, which were already on their way to the underworld. However, if Aldrian truly wanted to focus at this moment, he could erase even their souls, removing a being's existence entirely.

He had already reached the level where he could erase existence as thoroughly as a divine being, thanks to his death laws. That was also the reason why beings of the underworld had visited this realm in the past and had almost met Aldrian.

The disappearance of souls or the severing of soul's karma with the underworld were things those beings could sense, just like what happened when Aldrian killed the traitors of the Atria Kingdom in the past.

His comprehension of death laws continued to deepen with every breakthrough, combined with the accumulated comprehension of some of his past followers who had also comprehended them. The only thing preventing him from using the full potential of death laws was his current cultivation level.

Aldrian did not give these devils any chance at all. He killed them in one sweep.

He was still inside his domain, while these devils were outside of it but close enough for him to take advantage.

The devils who saw Aldrian kill many experts at the pseudo immortal establishment and pseudo immortal stage instantly fell into despair. They knew they could not win against someone like that. Moreover, Aldrian showed no signs of exhaustion!

Aldrian wanted to continue his carnage, but then he received an incoming communication through his communication artifact. He took out the artifact while using one hand to attack the escaping devils. Heavenly lightning shot out, but part of his focus was on the incoming message.

"Your Majesty, I received a report from our groups attacking another fortress. The enemy's leader at the peak pseudo immortal stage has appeared and is obstructing

their advance. My troops are currently fighting him with their battle formation, but I don't think they can gain the upper hand, especially now that the troops from the fortress have begun their counterattack," Queen Revania's voice resounded.

Hearing that, Aldrian frowned.

'I see. That guy didn't actually escape... he just changed his battlefield to the other side,' he thought.

"Alright, I will take care of that devil. How is your side?" he asked.

"Most of the fortress area has already fallen into our hands, Your Majesty. We only need to eliminate the devils who are still stubbornly resisting on one side of the fortress," the queen answered.

"Good. Keep pushing them, Queen Revania. Although the devils are already cornered, don't underestimate them."

"I will, Your Majesty."

After that, Aldrian cut the communication and decided to teleport higher. His body appeared just below the clouds, and he looked into the distance where he saw two giant avatars attacking something. He focused his gaze in that direction, trying to sharpen his sight enough to reach that distance.

A few seconds later, he finally saw the two avatars clearly. They were actually the battle formations of the Cerdian Kingdom's troops, and they were fighting the leader of the devils. The two avatars took the form of bulky figures with swords in their hands. Each swing shattered the surrounding terrain and caused space to tremble.

The devil, already in his devil form, skillfully evaded their strikes and counterattacked whenever he found openings. However, the coordination between the two avatars prevented him from destroying either one effectively.

Because the two battle formations consisted of the strongest troops and were entirely focused on handling the leader, gaps appeared among the troops attacking the fortress. This allowed the devils inside the fortress to fight back, even though they lacked high-level cultivators compared to their enemies.

Seeing that the situation could turn bad if it continued, Aldrian knew he had to act. From this distance, he would have difficulty targeting the devil leader with his normal techniques. He did not take long to find a solution.

He took out the Earth Shattering Bow and the Wind Slashing Arrow from his storage ring and aimed them at the devil in the distance. From where he stood, even that devil

was not visible to normal eyes, as the distance between them was more than a thousand kilometres.

But Aldrian could see the devil, and at this moment he focused entirely on aiming the arrow at him. He ignored the noise around him, which seemed to fade into silence. He also used his domain power to strengthen the arrow.

With its divine grade, the weapon could still withstand the huge power boost from his domain.

He could not release the arrow based on guesses, because the devil was constantly moving. He had to use a technique to ensure accuracy—one of the common techniques mastered by elves, where the arrow could follow its target, the homing arrow.

He took a deep breath, and once he was certain he could hit the target, he finally released the bowstring.

Thack!

A strong gust burst out from the bow as the arrow launched into the distance at a speed even a pseudo immortal stage cultivator would struggle to follow. The space along its path seemed on the verge of tearing, but because of the arrow's overwhelming speed and momentum, it did not create a rift. Instead, the arrow pierced through space itself.

Aldrian kept his gaze locked on his target as the arrow continued to track the devil.

At the place where the strongest devil was fighting, he was being besieged by the two avatars, which kept attacking him while supporting each other whenever he counterattacked. The leader's expression showed irritation as he still failed to kill anyone inside the battle formation. Their coordination and teamwork were simply too good.

The cultivators inside the battle formation were also frustrated because they still could not kill the devil despite their combined efforts. With their teamwork, they could kill a peak pseudo immortal existence, since the formations were made up of both pseudo immortal establishment and pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

But this devil was slippery and strong enough to withstand both battle formations, proving his power as the strongest devil here.

However, they suddenly sensed something approaching rapidly from the distance. The devil sensed it as well, and his danger sense instantly flared!

He wanted to evade, but unfortunately—

Whoosh! Boom!

An arrow had already arrived and instantly pierced through his body, destroying it and leaving only his head and lower body behind. The arrow struck the ground afterward, creating a massive crater and destroying everything around it.

The cultivators facing the devil were shocked by the sudden incoming arrow and instinctively looked toward the direction it came from. Those at the pseudo immortal stage could see the farthest, and they finally spotted Aldrian holding a bow.

The moment they saw him, their hearts trembled.

That was Aldrian the Great's strike?!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 881 - 881: Out of Character

[ 1,619 words ]

The cultivators who saw that Aldrian was actually the one who delivered the killing blow felt their hearts tremble. Aldrian could use a bow as well? And it was a powerful attack that killed a peak pseudo immortal stage cultivator in one strike.

Usually, something like this was done by cultivators who had already made the bow their main weapon artifact. They had mastered the art of attacking from long distance, to the point where even pseudo immortal stage cultivators were wary of them.

They could kill from a distance in a way that even pseudo immortal stage cultivators would find difficult to accomplish.

The cultivators who saw Aldrian were not shocked that he could kill a pseudo immortal with an arrow. What shocked them was the fact that everyone knew Aldrian was a sword cultivator, but at this moment he used a bow.

He was the master of the sword and had reached a level others could only hope to reach.

Now he could use a bow with precision, using a technique that required mastery, something a sword cultivator should not be capable of. Sword cultivators with high attainment normally carried a pure sword will within their heart, and they did not use other armament artifacts to the level of mastery. They only believed in the sword as their main armament.

Now, with Aldrian the Great able to use a bow in what clearly could not be called a beginner's level, did that mean he had mastered both the sword and the bow?

How was that possible?

How could he comprehend the pure way of the sword if he also mastered the bow?

The cultivators from the Cerdian Kingdom decided to put aside their confusion and shock for the moment, as they were still on the battlefield. They cupped their hands in thanks toward Aldrian in the sky, and Aldrian responded with a nod.

They then began helping the troops attacking the fortress, and just as expected, the devils were pushed back into it.

Aldrian, seeing that the situation had improved greatly, returned his focus to his troops. He saw that his troops could take care of the devils that had scattered into many places. He had already killed most of the devils' higher-ups here, while the others chose to escape. The ones that stayed behind were only their minions, and his troops could handle them.

However, he still planned to help his troops kill the devils. The size of the city made it impossible for his troops alone to clean it quickly. They needed more time to sweep through the area, especially since the devils had begun to reorganize and gather. They seemed to realize that escaping was useless and instead chose to fight until the end.

"For our god!"

"For our god!"

The devils shouted to raise their morale before charging toward the Aster Empire's troops.

However, Aldrian simply used gravity laws on them, destroying their bodies as if they were being stepped on by a giant. He flew across the city to look for the devils that had begun to gather and killed many of them, while his troops continued to advance and kill the ones they encountered.

The battle in the city continued for the next hour before the entire area was declared clear of devils. The moment they knew they had won, the Aster Empire's troops raised their hands and armaments in the air as they shouted in victory.

"Wooooaaa!"

"Victory!"

Aldrian nodded to himself with smile before turning his sight to the last fortress. The troops from the Cerdian Kingdom had already broken the barrier of the fortress and were still fighting to conquer it.

Aldrian decided to help them and teleported in that direction.

While Aldrian was helping at the other fortress, Queen Revania arrived in the city with some of her troops. They watched the aftermath of the battle and the destruction caused by Swords Apocalypse.

The remnants of the sword will could still be sensed, and the scene of destruction truly amazed them. The city was full of rubble, flattened as far as their sight could reach. Queen Revania then flew deeper as she tried to look for Aldrian to directly report the result of the battle.

But then she saw, in the distance, dust and smoke rising into the sky. She knew it came from the direction of the other fortress and assumed Aldrian was still helping the troops there.

She decided to head toward the fortress, but before she could fly farther, she saw Baek Jimin among the Aster Empire's troops who were resting.

She stopped, and after a few moments of thought, she decided to greet her.

Baek Jimin, who was resting after the battle with Angelica beside her, was stunned when she saw a group led by Queen Revania approaching. Angelica, noticing her as well, shifted her attention to the queen.

The mature beauty before them was, she had to admit, one of the most beautiful women she had ever seen. The queen's figure and armor made her look strong while still showing her grace and charm. And that was not even mentioning how her armor highlighted her body curves, which made Angelica think her underlings must have a hard time resisting her charm.

Baek Jimin stood up as Queen Revania seemed to want to greet her, which made the queen quickly speak.

"Please, your majesty Baek, you don't have to stand up, as you are still resting." Queen Revania said with a smile.

"I think that would be inappropriate, your majesty Revania. You are the leader of a nation just like Aldrian, and I have to show respect to you." Baek Jimin replied.

"Did your majesty want to look for Aldrian? He is in the other fortress helping your majesty's troops defeat the devils." she added.

"No, your majesty. I came to greet you and accompany you while his majesty Aldrian is taking care of the devils in the other fortress. While this city seems already cleared of devils, we are still in hostile territory, and we do not know what kind of tricks those devils have prepared here. I am here to make sure there is no problem while his majesty Aldrian is not near your majesty." Queen Revania replied.

Baek Jimin did not find Queen Revania's reason wrong, but she did not know why she felt there was something more behind it for this woman to approach her. It was just her instinct as a woman.

Queen Revania then looked at Angelica beside Baek Jimin.

"This must be the saintess of the Heavenly Direction Church of the Aster Empire. I already heard about your holiness's stories during my stay in the Aster Empire. The kind-hearted saintess who stole many hearts with her grace, kindness, and power. It is truly an honor to finally meet your holiness." She said with a smile.

"Ah, no, your majesty, that is too exaggerated, and instead it is truly an honor for me that your majesty knows me." Angelica replied.

The queen smiled and looked at Baek Jimin. "My apologies, your majesty, but may I take a rest beside you?"

"Of course, your majesty may rest beside me. Why would I forbid you?"

Although Baek Jimin still felt something strange, she allowed the queen to rest beside her. In fact, the queen's guards who followed her also felt something unusual about her since earlier. She seemed more amicable toward Baek Jimin and even approached her first.

They knew their queen's character, and normally she never initiated any approach toward someone, regardless of their status. Not even someone like Emperor Rozwald, the ruler of the strongest empire in the Orian continent.

Although she could socialize with others, she always seemed to place a barrier around herself so that her relationships would not reach a personal level. That was what they had known for as long as she had sat on the throne.

However, seeing their queen act like this in front of Baek Jimin gave them a strange feeling, because she seemed out of character. They wondered why she behaved like that. Was it because Baek Jimin was one of Aldrian the Great's women?

After the queen took a seat beside Baek Jimin, she looked at her guards.

"You may go somewhere. I would like to talk to her majesty privately."

"Yes, your majesty," her guards answered before taking their leave. After they left, Queen Revania looked at Baek Jimin with a smile.

"Ah, I finally can take a rest."

"Your majesty truly likes to jest. I don't think this battle could make your majesty feel tired," Baek Jimin said with a smile.

"Well, sometimes I just feel like taking a rest after doing something. Who doesn't like relaxing their mind and body?"

"That's true," Baek Jimin answered.

There was a brief silence as Queen Revania closed her eyes, as if she was enjoying the moment.

"Your majesty, you were truly strong. When I saw your technique earlier, I doubted any devil could withstand your power at all," Baek Jimin said.

The queen smiled when she heard that and looked at her. "Well, I made sure none of them would live another day, and I needed to strike them hard to shorten the conquest. That way, I could support the Aster Empire's troops here. But since the battle had already ended when we arrived, it seems I thought too much about the support I could offer."

Baek Jimin only smiled and looked in another direction, and another silence followed.

"Your majesty, may I ask a question that may sound personal to you?" Queen Revania suddenly asked, making Baek Jimin slightly confused.

"If I think it is something I can answer, then I will answer it, your majesty," she replied despite her confusion.

The queen nodded.

"May I know your history with his majesty Aldrian? I mean, how you met him?"

Baek Jimin and Angelica raised their eyebrows. For Baek Jimin, it immediately raised an alarm, while Angelica was confused why the queen would ask such a question.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 882 - 882: Angelica's Change

[ 1,502 words ]

Baek Jimin felt an alarm ringing inside her head because Queen Revania's question had already touched on Aldrian. She knew that this woman was attracted to Aldrian and bold enough to show her interest as if she did not fear the consequences.

Everything that involved Aldrian instantly triggered her instinct that this mature woman wanted to gain more information about him.

However, the queen's question did not truly touch anything that could be considered a secret, although it did reach into something more private that she only shared with someone close to her. The queen was of course not close to her, but the thing she asked about was not something that had to be kept secret until death or anything like that, so Baek Jimin thought it was fine to tell her.

She did not want to make their relationship awkward by refusing to share something like this since they were in an alliance.

"Well, our first meeting could be said to be the work of fate..." Baek Jimin then recounted how she had met Aldrian. Of course, she did not explain every detail, but it was enough to satisfy the queen's curiosity.

Angelica, who had remained silent beside her, also listened to her story. Although she had already heard Baek Jimin and Aldrian's past in more detail, she did not mind hearing it again. However, at this moment, she also paid attention to the mature, beautiful woman who suddenly asked that kind of private question.

Normally, that would be an inappropriate question to ask since they were not close enough for her to bring up something that touched on a private matter. She only remembered that their single meeting had been yesterday when Baek Jimin followed Aldrian and Queen Revania to her tent.

'Did they grow closer in that short time?' she thought.

This confused her, but she did not think too deeply about it and continued listening to Baek Jimin. As time passed, the queen asked more questions that revolved around Aldrian and even made comments about him.

Eventually, Angelica felt that something was really amiss and began to think that the queen had a specific purpose for asking those questions. Her thoughts wandered as she tried to figure it out, but before she could think any further, Aldrian suddenly appeared in the sky and landed before them.

This made her, Baek Jimin, and the queen smile at him, and he also smiled back at them.

"Done. The devils are finished in this region. They have lost their foundation here," he said before looking at Queen Revania.

"Queen Revania, good work subduing the fortress. I have to say that you unleashed a really powerful technique, strong enough that even I would have to be wary of facing it."

Queen Revania continued smiling. "You jest, Your Majesty. What I did is nothing compared to what Your Majesty could do. If I had to compare, my strength is like a drop of water compared to an entire lake of Your Majesty. This city is the witness of Your Majesty's power."

"Also, thank you for helping my troops in the other fortress, Your Majesty. With your strength, we could quickly conquer this region and free it from the devils' influence. After the war, I want to invite Your Majesty to my kingdom to show my thanks more properly," she added.

"Well, let's discuss about it after the war is over. For now, let's not get ahead of ourselves. There are still many battles ahead of us," Aldrian replied with a smile.

"Yes, Your Majesty," the queen replied.

Baek Jimin and Angelica, beside Aldrian, looked at their interaction. As for Baek Jimin, she could not help but feel that the queen was striking again with her effort to get close to Aldrian. Although the queen's expression showed nothing unusual, her eyes could not hide it.

For others, they would miss these details, but not Baek Jimin when she was already wary of Queen Revania. Her instinct grew sharper when it was about another woman trying to get close to Aldrian.

The queen's eyes clearly showed her interest in him, her gaze always focused on him and taking in every one of his movements.

Angelica also kept her attention on the queen, and she felt that the queen's hidden intent was growing stronger with the way she communicated with him. She could not help but suddenly feel uncomfortable inside her heart.

It was the feeling of someone trying to cut the queue in front of her and take the treasure first. That kind of feeling stirred a sense of urgency inside her, making her not want to lose and pushing her to defend her position.

Angelica then glanced at Baek Jimin. It looked like she needed to discuss this later. There was no way Baek Jimin, as Aldrian's woman, had not sensed something wrong from the queen.

After Aldrian's short conversation with Queen Revania, they coordinated to take care of the aftermath of the battle. For the Aster Empire's troops, they swept the city, while the Cerdian Kingdom's troops swept the two fortresses and built purification formations in those areas.

The city had already become Aldrian's domain, which meant it no longer needed purification formations. This was something Queen Revania could also sense, and it made her wonder what kind of secret method Aldrian used. He seemed to have a method to purify an area as large as an entire city, which she found truly amazing.

When she asked him, he only smiled and did not answer her, and even when she asked Baek Jimin, it seemed Baek Jimin also did not know.

Once again, her curiosity and interest toward Aldrian increased.

After they finished resting, they would continue their conquest journey toward the next targets. For Aldrian and his troops, they had to slow their pace because they needed to travel together with the Cerdian Kingdom. The troops from the Cerdian Kingdom did not have excessive energy replenishment pills like Aldrian's troops.

They needed more time to rest and recover their energy.

Some of the troops from the Cerdian Kingdom were left in this area to guard it and make sure no problems arose after it was conquered.

-----

For the next week, the two forces continued working together, and they kept taking territories from the devils. Their week-long conquest journey did not face any trouble, and all of their plans were executed smoothly. They were even getting closer to the other force from the Ancient Blue Gate World that was attacking another region.

They would join together and move toward the southern pole of the world, where they would unite with the other forces attacking from the other side.

During this time, Queen Revania continued showing her interest to Aldrian. Although Aldrian did not show any sign that he was interested, she did not seem to mind. She maintained her behavior well, acting as if she had no intent toward him and only speaking with him normally, as well as discussing something with Baek Jimin as if they were close

She also never crossed the borderline that would make her annoying or bother Aldrian to the point of anger or irritation.

Although he knew she was trying to seduce him quietly, he could not simply push her away because she did not bother him and only showed her interest in her own way. He did not want to turn their good relationship into something awkward by rejecting her outright, at least not during this war.

She was his comrade in arms, and he did not want any disturbance in their cooperation that could affect the war. In war, even a small factor could turn into something disastrous if not handled properly.

That was why he would keep the situation between him and Queen Revania as it was. Baek Jimin also shared the same opinion as Aldrian, so she continued acting normally in front of the queen.

However, there was one person who had shown more change over the past week. That person was Angelica. Her change was not in her appearance but in how she acted in front of Aldrian.

She seemed bolder in the way she tried to stay close to him or Baek Jimin. This change was clearly noticed by Aldrian, and he felt quite overwhelmed by it because he was not used to seeing Angelica act like this.

For example, Angelica visited his tent far more often, even at night, just to chat, and sometimes it ended in an awkward situation. She also began offering her help with anything, even trivial matters, and it looked a little funny—such as offering him a napkin after battles when he clearly did not need it.

However, despite her bold and sometimes amusing actions, Aldrian also found her very adorable, and he saw her effort to get closer to him as quite endearing. He appreciated her effort, and it touched his heart.

Baek Jimin was in no way oblivious to Angelica's change, and she could only inwardly sigh when she saw Angelica trying to get closer to Aldrian. She knew the cause of this change, and it began from the moment she talked to Angelica about Aldrian and how Queen Revania was interested in him.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 883 - 883: Confession of Her Heart 1**

[ 1,617 words ]

The change in Angelica happened after she and Baek Jimin talked about the queen's matter on the night after they attacked the big city. Angelica, who had asked about the queen's strangeness, finally heard from Baek Jimin that the queen seemed interested in Aldrian and even tried to seduce him.

After knowing what happened inside the queen's mind, Angelica seemed to become much different since then, and Baek Jimin also knew why she acted like that.

Angelica had already liked Aldrian for who knows how long, because Baek Jimin had seen the symptoms for the past months. There was no way she would miss the subtle signs of Angelica's interest in becoming Aldrian's woman when they talked so many times with each other.

In fact, Sylphia had already seen it as well, and when she and Sylphia talked in private, they discussed it on a few occasions. They found it unsurprising that Angelica would fall for Aldrian, because he was the one who changed her life completely.

He fixed the problem that had stayed with her since birth, and with Aldrian's character and his charm as a man, it would be surprising if Angelica did not fall for him. They already agreed that Aldrian's charm was fatal for women after all.

But then, if they could see it, they believed that Aldrian could see it too. With his sharp mind and his always-knowing character, he would notice Angelica's signs that she was interested in him.

Then they came to a conclusion regarding this matter. They would let Aldrian decide what Angelica's relationship with him would become in the future. The only one who truly had the power to decide this matter was himself.

Although they knew that Aldrian would ask for their opinion and permission regarding the harem, in the end they would support whatever his decision was. They knew that if Aldrian wanted something and needed their opinion and permission, then he would persuade them until they agreed. That was Aldrian's way of respecting them as his harem.

If he wanted to add Angelica into his harem, then they could only support him.

Angelica was already close to them anyway, and she was a sweet and kind woman who fit to become Aldrian's woman. They also knew that if Aldrian wanted to add someone to his harem, he would never bring in a woman with a bad character or bad intentions, so it gave them peace of mind.

They did not want a new harem member to create discord between them, which could create long-lasting problems in the end.

For Baek Jimin, who at this moment was the only one among Aldrian's women following him in this war, she also had her own opinion. She would support Angelica if she truly wanted to become part of Aldrian's harem.

She simply thought that Angelica was too good for Aldrian to pass on if he wanted to add her to his harem. She also believed that Sylphia would support this as well, since she had the same opinion regarding Angelica.

At least this was much better than Queen Revania, whose character they still did not know, and the queen was also not close to her. Although Queen Revania had already made efforts to build a closer relationship with her, it was still not enough to judge the queen's true nature.

There was also Sylphia, who still did not know about this matter, so of course she would support Angelica from behind.

At this time, she, Angelica, and Aldrian were inside Baek Jimin's tent. Aldrian had been invited by her to chat when the night had already come. The Aster Empire's troops had already finished building their temporary base for the night.

Baek Jimin inviting Angelica into her conversation with Aldrian was also her effort to give Angelica a chance and help her grow closer to Aldrian. And here they were, gathered around a small table with cups of tea on it.

Throughout their conversation, Baek Jimin always wanted to involve Angelica so she would talk more compared to their usual conversations. She could see that Angelica was also happy because she could gather with Aldrian.

As time passed, Baek Jimin thought that she needed to push harder and decided to make room for the two of them so they could talk to each other privately.

"Ah, I almost forgot, my father called me at this moment. Aish, I don't know why he asked me to meet him right now. You guys can continue without me," Baek Jimin said as she stood up and walked out of the tent.

"Wait..." Angelica wanted to stop her, but Baek Jimin had already slipped away from them. Angelica, who did not know what to do, blushed and lowered her head. She was alone with Aldrian at this moment inside the tent. If this had been in the past, she would have acted normally and talked with Aldrian about anything they could discuss.

However, since she had already accepted her feelings toward Aldrian, she could not act normal when they were left alone like this. Moreover, her feelings had become uncontrollable for the past few days. She really wanted to show her affection to him and did not want to lose to Queen Reviana, who seemed much bolder than her.

That was why she had stepped up her game, which made her quite aggressive lately, something she believed Aldrian must have noticed as well.

She blushed hard and did not dare to look at Aldrian.

Then, there was an awkward silence between them.

Aldrian found this situation funny and could not help but think that Angelica was truly adorable at this moment. She pushed herself in front of others in her effort to get close to him, but the moment they had private time like this, she instantly became very shy.

He instinctively wanted to tease her, since this was a perfect moment for that. However, he decided to set that thought aside for now, because this was also a good time for him to talk about their relationship more seriously. The moment was still hot after all.

"Angelica, how have you been recently?" he decided to break the silence first.

"Ah, I'm good, I'm good. How about you?" Angelica lifted her head as she answered him with a slight blush.

"I'm good," Aldrian replied with a smile that made her lower her head again. There was another moment of awkward silence, but then Angelica heard Aldrian move his chair closer to her, which made her heartbeat speed up.

Because she kept lowering her head, she could only see his shadow and part of his lower body that was already near her.

Aldrian smiled, and he did not say anything immediately. Instead, he observed her quietly.

After a silence filled with expectation for Angelica, she finally heard Aldrian speak.

"Angelica, would you look at me?"

Angelica did not answer immediately, and she still kept her head lowered. Aldrian did not force her either. He simply waited for her to look at him, the smile still on his face.

After waiting for more than fifteen seconds, Angelica finally dared to lift her head and slowly look at his face. However, Aldrian could see that her gaze still wanted to evade his, so she did not look directly into his eyes.

He could not help but find the woman in front of him truly innocent and endearing, making him want to protect her from the ugliness of the world with the way she acted.

How could he not feel that way when the woman who did not seem like the type to make the first advance forced herself so he would be attracted to her? And now, her real self finally appeared when there were only the two of them.

"Angelica, to be honest, I have wanted to talk to you about this matter for some time, but I never found the right moment for it. So I think this is a good time to bring it up." Angelica's heartbeat kept racing as she grew nervous. What kind of topic did Aldrian want to talk about? Was it about her behavior lately?

She would not be surprised if he wanted to talk about that, because someone like Aldrian could clearly see how her treatment toward him had changed so drastically.

"I'm sorry if I have to be direct, but do you like me romantically?" Aldrian asked.

Badump!

Her heart beat so loudly she could hear it herself. It was a direct question that did not give her any chance to give a vague answer. The only answers were yes or no.

The answer, of course, was very obvious, and she believed Aldrian already knew it as well.

However, knowing it and keeping it inside was different from saying it out loud in front of the man she liked. She stayed silent as she tried to gather her courage, and after she felt she could speak, she finally opened her lips.

"I think you already know the answer," she said in a small voice as she lowered her head again.

"Hmmm, is that so? But I want to hear it from you directly, so I can know that what I'm thinking is not just me being too overconfident and embarrassing myself," Aldrian replied, still with his smile.

After another fifteen seconds of silence, she finally gathered her courage and slowly nodded her head. However, Aldrian did not seem satisfied and began to push her.

"I didn't hear anything, Angelica," he said.

After another brief silence, she finally spoke.

"I... like... you."

Her voice was so small that even the sound of a fly would be much louder.

But Aldrian could hear it clearly.

Still, he wanted her to say it more clearly.

"I didn't hear you."

"I like you."

This time it was slightly louder.

"What? Please say it louder."

"I LIKE YOU!"

She suddenly burst out, which made Aldrian stunned. He saw her gaze locked directly on him, with tears already threatening to fall.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 884 - 884: Confession of Her Heart 2

[ 1,644 words ]

Aldrian was stunned when he saw Angelica's eyes water as her tears threatened to fall. Her beautiful golden eyes glimmered from the wetness. Her face still carried a flush from her shyness, but her eyes showed deep embarrassment and even a wronged gaze, which made him feel guilty. Had he gone too far this time?

"Angelica, I'm sorry—"

"I like you. I just can't hold this feeling that keeps growing each time I meet you. I can't help but keep drowning in it." She cut off his words, leaving him silent.

"Initially, I thought all of this was only my admiration for you. I thought it was the result of the huge gratitude I felt toward you, the feeling of owing you a huge favor," Angelica continued, her voice shaking.

"However, I know now that this feeling is more than merely admiration, and in the end I learned that this is me being romantically attracted to you. Every time you show your affection to Sylphia and Baek Jimin, I can't help but feel envious. I feel like I also want to have the same treatment as them."

"I also want to be close to you as I like. I also want to show my affection to you. I want to touch you just like they touch you, hug you just like they hug you. I want to be loved just like them." At this point, her tears finally fell. Pain now filled her gaze.

"I know that I have to do something if I want to be like them, and that's why I tried slowly so I could slip into your heart. Even though I didn't know if I could do that, or if I would succeed and not end up becoming an embarrassment, I still wanted to try it. I was afraid I would regret it if I didn't try." She wiped her eyes with the back of her hand.

"I thought I could take my time to enter your heart, but the appearance of Queen Revania truly shook me. Her showing interest in you with her own way and charm triggered me, I just... I just..." As if realizing what she had just said, she stopped her words and stood up.

"I'm sorry, excuse me..." she said before running toward the entrance of the tent, intending to leave.

However, before she could leave the tent, a hand suddenly grabbed her hand and pulled her body into an embrace. Her face pressed against Aldrian's chest, allowing her to inhale his scent clearly. Her eyes widened in shock as he held her, his hand resting softly on her head.

Aldrian's expression turned warmer as he hugged her and stroked her head.

Angelica's eyes trembled as she stayed still in his embrace.

"I'm sorry. I'm sorry that I wasn't sensitive enough and made you cry. I'm sorry," Aldrian said.

Angelica's eyes trembled, and she instinctively tried to refute him.

"No, you are not at fault! Why would—"

"If I were sensible enough, I wouldn't have pushed you to answer my question earlier and made you cry like this. I'm sorry." Aldrian cut off her words, making her fall silent.

"I feel really guilty. I knew how you felt, yet I still asked that question. Maybe it's because I'm used to teasing the ones close to me, so I didn't consider your reaction. Once again, I'm truly sorry," he added as he continued to hold her warmly.

"At this moment, I really feel terrible for making you like this, but I would like you to hear what I want to say after this. Do you want to hear it?"

Hearing that, Angelica couldn't help but feel calmer and nodded. She unconsciously returned his hug in search of comfort. Aldrian let her hold him, and they remained in

each other's arms for a while. No words were spoken, only a warm atmosphere surrounding the two figures giving each other warm in their embrace.

After Aldrian thought Angelica had already calmed down, he released his hug. He grasped one of her hands and gently guided her back to her seat. He also sat down, and while still holding her hand, he asked with a warm smile,

"Much calmer?"

Angelica, still wiping her tears, nodded and finally took a deep breath. Her eyes were still wet, but as if she had gained courage after her outburst, she looked directly at Aldrian. After pouring out everything she felt, she thought there was nothing left to lose. She wanted to know Aldrian's opinion and what he wanted to say after this.

"Angelica, there are a few things I have to tell you regarding this matter," Aldrian said with a slightly serious expression. His gaze focused on her, and her gaze was just as firmly fixed on him.

"First, I know about your feelings for me, and I am open to any future relationship between us." Angelica's heart trembled, but she kept her expression focused on Aldrian.

"To be honest, if I ever added another woman into my harem, that would be you, Angelica. Why, if you asked me? Well, I just feel that way. I feel that if there is a woman who could enter my heart just like Sylphia and Baek Jimin, it would be you." Aldrian then smiled again.

"You don't have to feel threatened by the appearance of other women like Queen Revania. If you think she has more qualities than you because she is stronger, and that it would make me enamored with her, then you are still underestimating me, Angelica."

"I don't open my heart easily to other women. Because if I did, then I would already have tens or even hundreds in my harem, since there are many beautiful women stronger than you." His words stung in her heart, but they were the truth—a truth that instead made her feel lucky.

It was because she felt special. Aldrian, who met many women from outside the empire every day, women who had far higher qualities than her, still said that she had a place in his heart.

"The only feeling I have toward those many women at most is admiration for their beauty, which is normal. And that's also because I like beautiful things—and that's it," he said with a slightly joking tone, which finally made her show a small smile.

"So you know how special you are compared to others, right? So please don't cry, and keep your confidence. Don't let the appearance of other women make you feel

threatened or inferior. You are one of the closest figures to me after all the time we've spent together, and once again, my heart is open to you."

"That part of my heart will slowly be filled with your space, just like Sylphia and Baek Jimin. The only thing left is time. Give me time so I can develop my love for you, so that everything I do for you in the future won't come from pity, but from my love for you." Aldrian said as he tightened his grasp on her hand.

Angelica kept her gaze locked on him. She looked at the seriousness in everything he had just said, and after a few moments, she suddenly lowered her head again. A blush appeared on her beautiful face, as if she realized what she had done and also what she had just heard from Aldrian.

Aldrian, seeing her return to her usual self, smiled warmly before letting out a sigh.

"If only I had been more firm toward Queen Revania, this could have been prevented."

"No, you are not wrong. Please don't blame yourself because of my action. As a woman, Queen Revania has her own feelings, and she was simply showing her effort to attract you. It's my fault for not being able to control my feelings, and I know there are many things to consider regarding Queen Revania," Angelica replied as she looked into his eyes and touched the hand that was holding her other hand.

"Please don't do anything that makes the situation between you and Queen Revania turn awkward. You can act normally in front of her."

Aldrian looked at her hand and couldn't help but show a teasing smile before looking at her face.

"Now this is much better. You're getting more confident and daring."

Angelica, hearing that, blushed even more, and she couldn't help wanting to run out of the tent. However, Aldrian tightened his grasp, preventing her from getting away.

Once again, he found Angelica like this adorable, which made him want to tease her even more.

After Angelica calmed down and no longer tried to escape from him, he finally released her hand.

"I suddenly feel curious. Angelica, tell me, since when did you start becoming romantically attracted to me?" he asked.

"Uhhmm, well, I think it was not long after I stayed in your palace? I don't know, but every time I saw your interaction with Sylphia or Jimin, I felt something stir inside my heart," she answered as she slightly lowered her head in shyness.

"But maybe my interest in you already happened even before I stayed in the palace, and that's why when I saw your interactions with Sylphia and Jimin, I felt envious," she added with an unsure tone.

Aldrian nodded in understanding and smiled warmly.

"I see. With your outburst just now, it truly showed every feeling you stored all this time. Even I wouldn't be surprised if you were dreaming about me in your sleep." He said it teasingly, which made her face turn as red as a tomato.

But then she remembered something and glanced at him slightly.

"Well... actually, one of the reasons I acted bolder toward you these past few days is because I suddenly got a vision from the heavens, and... Uuhhh, I don't know, it was much different from the usual visions the heavens give me. It was more like...more like a dream of someone? I don't really know how to explain it."

Hearing that, Aldrian couldn't help but let his teasing smile fade.

A strange dream?

'Is it just like what I thought?' he wondered.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 885 - 885: The Unbreakable Connection?

[ 1,642 words ]

A vision that came from the heavens was a clue that Aldrian did not want to ignore.

"A vision from the heavens, huh? Would you like to tell me what kind of vision the heavens gave you? Now I'm seriously curious because you said it affected you enough to make such a drastic change in how you act," Aldrian asked.

Angelica's shyness receded when she saw that Aldrian's expression seemed slightly serious. She did not know why, but she still answered him.

"Well, the first one happened on the night when you asked me to stay in your tent, when you were with Jimin in her tent. That night, I fell asleep and had a dream that felt so real

I thought I had become a being inside the dream." But then her face showed slight worry, and she suddenly grabbed Aldrian's hand.

"Before I continue, please know that this is only a dream and I never did any of the things inside it."

Hearing that, Aldrian smiled and nodded. "I know, you don't have to worry about my feelings or my reaction. I'm not that petty, you know?" he said as he also grasped her hand.

Angelica sighed in relief before she continued.

"Inside that dream, I lived in an unknown world. It was truly different from our Ancient Blue Gate World. In that world, I also lived with a man, and he had a completely different face and character compared to you. If I describe it, he was more careless and wild compared to you." Her face showed confusion.

"However, the strange thing is that I felt as if the man in that dream was you. I know it sounds strange and doesn't make any sense, but it is what it is. I just felt that man was you but with a different body."

"I felt deep love for him, and we lived together for a short time..." Her face suddenly turned bright red.

"Uhm, and we... well, you know... did the thing between a man and a woman..." she said in a small voice, which made Aldrian smirk, though he did not say anything.

"Anyway, in that dream we lived together for a short time, because it ended tragically. I was killed by some people, leaving that man alone. I really don't want to remember it again," she said as she turned her head away.

Aldrian stroked her hand to comfort her.

"And then came another dream in the next few nights. All of them showed different places and different men, but my feelings were still the same. The ending was also the same, I always had a tragic end caused by various things. I never died a good death." She continued, then sighed.

"I did not understand what those dreams or visions meant. Is the heavens showing me the lives of different people and letting me feel what they felt? Is that the heavens' way of telling me that I will have a tragic end? Is that the heavens' way of telling me that I will not have a chance to be together with you?"

"I just didn't understand, and it truly made me afraid. I want to gain my own happiness, and I'm happy with you. How could I not be affected when I was given those kinds of dreams?"

"With Queen Revania also being interested in you, and with dreams like that, it pushed me to take a much more radical approach toward you, which you clearly saw in the past few days." She spoke with a slightly trembling voice.

Aldrian tightened his grip on her hand and continued stroking it to calm her. However, after hearing her explanation, it strengthened his belief and made him more certain about his guess.

He had already guessed that all the members of his harem were people who had a connection to his past life—or one of his past lives.

One of the reasons he thought of that was because of the signs that had already been shown to him through dreams, just like what happened when he was with Sylphia. In his vision after he had sex for the first time with Sylphia, he was brought to one of his past lives, and in that vision he was with another woman.

The woman was fully human. However, although her face and race were different, he had a strong feeling that she was Sylphia. No—he believed that he was with Sylphia in that vision.

In that life, they were also lovers, and they were only ordinary mortals without any powers. They lived in a world without cultivation. He worked like a mortal and did everything normally.

Although he did not see the entire span of that past life, he could conclude that he had been quite a poor man while Sylphia in that life had a high status.

They faced their own difficulties and challenges in their relationship, but they always stayed together.

That was only an example of one of his past lives, and he had many more. There were several in which he believed he met Sylphia again and again.

For them to meet repeatedly in different lives was not a coincidence. It was fate, and it was because their karmic connection remained tied strongly even when they reincarnated into different lives in different places.

Then there was also Baek Jimin, who comprehended the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture. Although he still had not received any vision regarding their past life together, the fact that she comprehended the Heavenly Demon's Flower Scripture while he himself comprehended the Heavenly Demon Scripture was not a coincidence.

They were like the Heavenly Demon and the Celestial Red Rose, the wife of the Heavenly Demon. It felt as though their comprehension of the scriptures itself was a sign that their fate had long been intertwined.

To manage a fate like that could only be done by high level gods or the heavens themselves. He did not know whether it was his followers or the heavens that shaped it that way.

Because of that kind of situation surrounding him, he believed that every woman who truly wanted to become his woman would be tied to him forever.

"Do you make it that way? Is it true that my current harem is made of women who have connections to my past lives?" Aldrian finally asked the heavens themselves as he sent his intent.

"Once the connection is built by me with sincere feeling, it will remain connected. The heavens do not dare to sever or intervene in the absolute one's karmic connection and fate with specific people. The fate of the absolute one is special, and the absolute one could continue to meet them in the next lives." He repeated the heavens' intent in his mind, which made him slightly confused.

Did that mean the one who made the situation with his harem turn out like this was his past self's doing alone? That he had built the connections with certain people, and the heavens were simply supporting him?

'Wait, sincere feeling... specific people... so it's not only my harem? Does it mean everyone I have sincere feelings toward will form a strong karmic connection with me and follow me into some of my next lives?'

Suddenly he felt that this matter was not only explaining his harem, but also his family as a whole.

'Does that mean father and mother are included as well? Does that mean they were also my family in my past lives?'

He felt that this matter was getting deeper than he initially thought.

He took a deep breath when he thought about it. Once again, he reminded himself that his being as the absolute one was truly extraordinary, to the point that even the people close to him were affected by his presence.

So extraordinary that even the heavens and their laws only supported what he did and his will, instead of the other way around.

Usually, a being tended to live within the heavens' will and laws, and that included cultivators. Even if cultivators reached divinity, they would still be bound to the heavenly laws to a certain extent.

They could be separated in their next life even if they had a close relationship in their previous life, or they could meet each other again, depending on fate.

But here he was, the reincarnation of the absolute one, which made the heavens not dare to sever or interfere in his relationships with anyone from his past lives. Even if they reincarnated many times, they would still meet each other again in their new lives in this vast universe.

From this, he could also conclude that every relationship he built with sincere feeling in this life would bind them forever. Unless—

'I sever it personally.'

He released a sigh and looked at Angelica, who was also looking at him with a worried gaze.

"Is there something wrong?" she asked. She had seen Aldrian deep in thought, sometimes showing a serious expression that made her unsettled. She wondered if he had discovered something from her dream that she herself did not know.

Or did he, in the end, find her dream repulsive because she had dreamt of various men? She couldn't help but feel nervous and even started to panic inside, but then she saw him smile.

"I see. Thank you for explaining your dream. I just understood something, and it made me think that I'm glad I met you, and to be liked by you," he said with full warmth.

Angelica's nervous expression turned into a deep blush, and she lowered her head in shyness. Her heart felt full of butterflies at that moment, leaving her speechless.

"Ah, you already returned, Jimin?" he suddenly said, which made Angelica instinctively look toward the entrance of the tent.

However, she didn't see anyone, and she instantly realized that Aldrian had tricked her. Embarrassment rose in her chest as she turned her head toward him, intending to show her displeasure.

But her eyes widened when she felt a sensation on her forehead.

She froze slightly, because at that moment Aldrian kissed her forehead.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 886 - 886: Bad Fate?**

[ 1,734 words ]

Angelica did not move at all as she was still shocked by the sensation of Aldrian's lips on her forehead. She never expected that Aldrian would do that.

After a few seconds, he finally moved his lips away and looked at Angelica with a smile. There were no words from him, and she could only blink a few times. But then her face flushed and she lowered her head.

Aldrian saw how shy this woman in front of him was, and it truly made him want to tease her more.

However, that kiss was his way of showing her that she did not have to worry about anything and that he always opened his heart for her.

There was only silence for a few moments as Angelica was still too shy to start the conversation while Aldrian simply smiled as he observed her shyness from his seat. He still held her hand and stroked it.

After a few more seconds, Angelica finally opened her lips.

"Aldrian, I love you."

Her voice was so small, but Aldrian could still hear it, which made him stunned. Now she used the word "love," which showed that she was already firm in her feelings. There was no doubt inside her heart anymore.

This made his heart warm, and it also touched him greatly. Although his feelings for her had not bloomed the same way as his feelings toward Sylphia and Baek Jimin, it still made his heart flutter.

How could it not?

From her stories, this woman was the one who had accompanied several of his past lives, and in the end she fell in love with him again. Every life was different, yet she always returned to him because of the fate he created himself. It was the fate that guided her heart back to him, and it was also what allowed him to find his way to her.

Although he had not received any vision regarding Angelica, he believed her stories about those dreams. Because of those stories, he understood that his heart had actually been ready to accept another love, a love meant for her for a long time.

It was no wonder his heart seemed to accept her presence so easily, and why he never found her approach strange. It was supposed to be like this. His heart was already open, and once again it would be filled by her.

Aldrian felt more determined to develop his feelings for the woman in front of him so that one day he could say the word love to her with full certainty. He wanted to say I love you with nothing inside him except love, and not because of pity, or anything else.

He couldn't help but want to tease her again as he leaned his head closer to her lowered face.

"What? I think I could not hear—"

Before he could finish his words, he widened his eyes because Angelica suddenly raised her head and, with a quick movement, pecked his lips with hers.

It happened so fast that he could not even savour the feeling of her lips touching his before she moved away and ran outside the tent without a single word. He did not stop her because of the shock he still felt. He could only gaze at her figure as she disappeared outside.

After a few seconds, he finally released a sigh and showed a smile.

"She really got me," he murmured. To think that she could trick him like that and give him such a shock.

He touched his lips as if he wanted to remember the feeling of her lips on his in that short moment. He stayed in his seat and leaned against it to relax his body, then closed his eyes. He still kept his smile, and at this moment, he was truly in a good mood.

At the very least, the matter regarding Angelica had been solved. Now she did not need to force herself to do something that made her act unlike herself.

But then he took note of a detail from her stories that made him open his eyes and frown. She had told him that every one of her dreams always ended in a tragic end. From his point of view, it was as if bad fate kept following her in every life. Even in this life, she was born unable to see or walk.

When he asked the heavens about Angelica's bad fortune in this life at that time, he learned that it was not the heavens that made her life miserable. Moreover, with the heavens knowing Angelica's connection to some of his past lives, he doubted the heavens would want her to suffer.

In his eyes, the tragic fate that seemed to always follow Angelica was not a coincidence.

'It is more like she is cursed to have bad fate,' he thought solemnly.

If what he thought was true, then something like that could only be done by a high-level god. It would be a curse engraved onto one being even through reincarnation, and difficult to erase.

The heavens could not do anything about it because even they were bound to certain rules established since the start of time. The rules that prevented them from directly intervening in many things within the universe.

As long as the beings of the universe did not do something that triggered a reaction from the heavens, then the heavens could not intervene.

If the heavens were not bound by such rules, the universe would develop in an uncertain direction. The universe might not develop at all, and the universe would become weak because the heavens would be controlling too much.

Now, if Angelica at some point in her past life received a curse from a god, then a question rose. Who was the one that cursed her?

He doubted that any of his followers would do that. Even if they somehow cursed her before she had any relationship with him, his followers would likely erase the curse the moment she built a connection with him. There was no way they would leave it in place. That would be the same as a slap right on his face.

'Is it one of those invaders?' The moment he reached this conclusion, he felt irritated, but he quickly calmed down.

If that was the case, then who was Angelica when she was cursed by them? There was no way those gods would curse her randomly. She must have been a great figure who pushed those invaders to decide to curse her.

He suddenly grew very curious about Angelica's past lives and her identity in each of them. He wanted to know who she was when she received such a curse. Those gods must have been furious or threatened enough to place a curse on her.

But then a concern rose in his heart. If this was indeed a curse from the invaders, then it might still be engraved in her being. He had already fixed the problems with her eyes and feet, and at this moment there was no issue in her life.

However, there was no knowing what future awaited her.

She could end up just like her past lives—dead, and as she said, never with a good death.

Imagining that she might end up experiencing bad fate again in the future made him angry. His eyes glistened dangerously.

'Bad fate? Curse? Let's see if they can harm Angelica in my presence.'

As he was still thinking about Angelica, he turned his head toward the tent's entrance because he saw Baek Jimin entering with a smile on her face. Seeing her figure, he smiled and straightened his body in his seat.

Baek Jimin walked closer. "What happened between you and Angelica? I just saw her running toward Pope Claudius's tent with a face full of embarrassment." She asked with a slight tease.

However, she did not receive any answer. Instead, she saw him stand up from his seat, still with that same smile. She stopped her steps as she sensed something wrong with his expression, and her danger sense began to tingle!

His smile was hiding something deeper!

She wanted to run back outside, but before she could reach the entrance, Aldrian already appeared behind her and tried to catch her. She quickly used her movement technique so her body could move faster, which allowed her to almost touch the tent's entrance.

Unfortunately for her, just as she was about to get out of the tent, she suddenly could not move her body at all. She could only move her head, and when she sensed Aldrian right behind her, hugging her waist, her body trembled.

"Where are you going, my love?" Aldrian asked softly beside her ear.

"Why do you have to escape when you could stay with me and discuss what happened after you left Angelica and me alone?" He stroked her waist.

"Do you think you already did something wrong for you to try to run from me? Or did you feel guilty for making me handle Angelica's feelings right here without telling me anything beforehand?"

"My dear Aldrian, let's discuss what happened in a more civilized manner. I only wanted to help Angelica solve her problem. It's much better than seeing her like that for the past few days, right? From what I saw, it seemed something good happened to her, and that's also good for you," Baek Jimin said hurriedly. She tried to look at Aldrian's face beside her.

"Oh yes, of course it's better for me to solve her problem as soon as possible, and I'm thankful that you gave us some alone time," Aldrian said, which made her smile nervously.

"See, then you could—"

"But I still need to punish you for making your own plan without telling me anything. It could have ended badly for Angelica, you know?" Aldrian cut off her words, and her eyes trembled.

"Wait, Aldrian." She then felt her body moving on its own as Aldrian carried her toward the bed not far from them.

"It's punishment time for a bad girl," he said with a chilling smile, which made her expression turn frightened.

"No—" she shouted, but Aldrian was already faster. He instantly covered the tent with a formation so no sound could escape and no one could enter.

Later that night, Aldrian punished her with "extreme training" that made her bathe in her own sweat. It was an extreme training filled with pleasure, and her screams that were full of ecstasy..

At that moment, Baek Jimin deeply regretted pulling "a prank" like that on Aldrian. It made her decide that she should never try that sort of prank on him again.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 887 - 887: Another Devils Strategy**

[ 1,549 words ]

For the next few days, Aldrian and his troops, together with the Cerdian Kingdom's forces, continued their advance and took several locations from the devils. They also finally met another force from the beast continent, this one formed by the alliance of the Golden Stripes Tiger, Silver Back Leopard, and Two Tails Monkey tribes.

These three beast tribe members that joined this expedition were not large in number, as their combined forces consisted of no more than twenty thousand. However, that number was enough to bring destruction to the devils. The beast race itself was already much stronger compared to other races in raw power, and the ones participating in this war mostly consisted of strong beasts.

The average cultivation of these beasts was at the Grand Duke stage, with each of their tribe leaders also joining them. It showed they did not hold back in showing their most of their power for this war at all.

With their power, even the devils in their devil forms had to be wary of these strong beasts. Their physical strength was already powerful, and they could also attack with their innate techniques, which were terrifying.

Their temperaments were also quite ferocious, and normally, on the beast continent, they held certain rivalries between tribes. But they had united for this war expedition as one big team.

No matter how ferocious they were or how intense their rivalry with each other was, they needed to work together. They knew they couldn't move alone in this war because no matter how strong they were, if they acted with only one tribe's power, they would not be able to withstand the devils, who had the advantage in numbers.

They needed to work together to fight in this war.

When they finally met with Aldrian and his forces, they showed him their utmost respect. For them, a figure as strong as Aldrian was worthy of all their respect. And as the leader who initiated this war, allowing them to feel the thrill of battle, they were truly thankful to him.

At this moment, they were gathered around a large table inside the big tent they had just built. They were resting after their forces finally assembled, and for today, their targets had been achieved.

"So tomorrow we could strike this city from here and there. My scouts already sent a message that the devils in the city seems to be in panic because they must have heard about what happened in other places," the leader of the Two Tails Monkey, in his human form, said while pointing at the map.

"From the looks of it, the devils must be preparing some desperate action against us the moment we arrive at the battlefield," the leader of the Golden Stripes Tiger said.

"I agree. This is a strategic city that blocks any force moving toward the south pole from this region. They must be desperate to hold us back with everything they have, even if they have to blow themselves up," the leader of the Silver Back Leopard said.

"It looks like the assassins will be more active tonight. They will try to obstruct us from attacking tomorrow, so we need to tighten the security around the base camp," the Two Tails Monkey added.

Aldrian, who heard it from the side, looked at him.

"Assassins?" he asked in wonder.

The monkey leader nodded. "Yes, assassins. Did your majesty not have any assassin disturbances all this time?"

Aldrian looked at Queen Revania, and she also looked at him before he shook his head.

"No," he replied.

"I see. Then your majesty's group must be one of the groups that still hasn't been touched by the assassins. We heard from other beast tribes that they were attacked at night for the last few days by assassins. It looks like the devils are using another strategy to disturb us and dwindle our numbers. But the damage to our tribes is minimal, and we managed to kill some of their assassins," the monkey replied.

"They were also so decisive that if any of them were caught, they instantly chose suicide, which made it impossible for us to gain any information from them," he added.

"I think those assassins are from the Red Tower, just like the information provided. They are slippery and quite strong compared to the assassin groups in the central star cluster," the Silver Back Leopard said.

Aldrian thought about this after hearing the report.

The Red Tower was the name of the assassin group of the devils here, and they obeyed the orders of Xarz, the leader of the devils of the Fallen Star Cluster. Their groups were spread across the planets in the Fallen Star Cluster, with their headquarters located in the Red Mist Star.

With them already moving, it seemed the devils had a new leader replacing Xarz despite him still being alive. He did not find that surprising, since with the absence of their leader, someone had to take command so the chain of command would not collapse and the devils would not fall into chaos.

There was one person, based on Xarz's information, who might take that position. That devil was his right-hand man, the one already considered by many devils as the second in command, Hesperdolf.

That man was still alive, as he managed to escape from every alliance attack, and at this moment his location was unknown. Aldrian had already asked Xarz about the possibility of Hesperdolf's whereabouts, but even Xarz was not sure. In the current situation, Hesperdolf could be anywhere.

With him decided as the one taking the reins, Aldrian thought the devils' movements would be more coordinated between one region and another.

However, in his opinion, it was all useless. At this moment, more than half of the world had already fallen into the alliance forces' hands. The devils' positions were also spread unevenly across the world, and many were even besieged without any way out. The alliance forces were already spread everywhere, creating a net that would catch any devils trying to escape, even into space.

Heserdolf only had limited troops, and communication with them would also be difficult with the alliance forces blocking any form of communication.

Aldrian looked at the others as he spoke to them.

"The assassins might be troublesome, but I have my own way to deal with them. Leave those assassins to me. I think this is a good chance for us to gain some information that could help us locate the devils' highest command at this moment."

Hearing that, the beasts raised their eyebrows, and the monkey sighed.

"I'm really ashamed that your majesty has to take care of this trivial matter. Actually, your majesty, we can still handle those assassins, as they are not really a big problem for us. We already built a defense that allows us to find them easily if they infiltrate our base camp," he said.

"Still, they are surely annoying and irritating because they can disturb our rest continuously. For us, the higher-level cultivators, it might not be a problem, but the lower-level cultivators will be affected since they cannot rest properly," he added, and the other beasts also nodded in agreement.

Aldrian smiled. "Well, it's nothing. The sooner the troops' problem is solved, the better it is. We don't want our troops to be affected by the enemy's machinations, and they need to be able to fight in good condition."

The others nodded in agreement. After that, they discussed the war for another hour before finally concluding their meeting. Aldrian returned to his troops' base camp, and after that, he would wait for the night to fall and for those assassins to strike.

-----

Night fell and darkness covered the world. In this place, on the top of the hill overlooking the valley, the only light that could be seen came from the torches erected in many spots across the large base camp that housed more than a million troops. The alliance forces chose this place to build their camp because of its ideal location.

It was easy to defend and difficult to attack.

Guards patrolled with full focus here and there. They always moved in groups of five to cover each other's weaknesses and blind spots. They knew about the assassins' attacks over the past few days, and they had to be prepared for anything tonight.

As the guards of the alliance forces patrolled in and out of the base, on another hill in the distance, a group of twenty black-robed figures appeared. Their presence and movements were so silent that not even the slightest sound or disturbance emerged.

They observed the base camp in the distance, which glimmered with countless torches.

"They seem to have joined with other forces, and they are humans. I think this will be much more difficult this time since their numbers are significantly bigger," one of the robed figures said.

"Doesn't matter. We will still try to kill any of them and disturb them. If we have a chance, then we kill their higher-ups. Remember, our mission is to dwindle their strength no matter what," the strongest figure at the middle pseudo immortal stage said.

"We will attack the humans' side of the camp. Let's see if they are as good as those beasts," he added before disappearing, followed by the others.

Inside the Aster Empire's base camp, Aldrian was inside his tent with his eyes closed as if he were meditating. After a few moments, he sensed something and opened his eyes.

"They're here."

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 888 - 888: Trapping Assassins

[ 1,502 words ]

The group of devil assassins moved with fast yet silent steps as they approached the camp from the side where the Aster Empire was located. From this direction, the patrols, which consisted of cultivators from various powers within the Aster Empire, moved in a coordinated manner.

They had already been informed about the assassin threat, which made them feel tense. The devils here were strong with their high-level cultivation, and if they sent assassins with the same strength, it would be even more terrifying.

They were not confident in detecting normal assassins in the Ancient Blue Gate World, let alone assassins from this place.

Without the patrols knowing, the assassins they were wary of were already approaching their direction, and at this moment their distance was less than a kilometre. Under the darkness of the night, the devils used movement techniques based on darkness laws that concealed even more of their presence.

As they had already planned how they would launch their attack, they began to spread out. Their plan was simple: kill everyone in sight silently. They had to keep doing it until all of the enemies were killed or until they were found out.

There were some who would enter the base camp, while the others would kill any patrols located outside the camp.

The devils had already spread out, and most of them entered the camp while the rest targeted the nearby patrols.

The patrols, which consisted of elves and cultivators from the Doria Kingdom, were looking around their surroundings with full attention. They also heightened their senses to detect any small movement.

But, unfortunately for them, they did not know that the assassins had already targeted them, and one of them was already upon them.

From behind, one of the assassins swept his dagger and almost cut their neck in one strike. However, before his dagger could even touch their skin, without any sound and without any disturbance, the assassin's figure suddenly disappeared.

The other assassins who were also targeting the outside patrols had nearly killed their targets when suddenly their figures disappeared as well.

In fact, at this very moment, all of the assassins who had infiltrated the camp and were about to kill many of the Aster Empire's troops also vanished. Even with all of this happening, no one realized the death that had almost befallen them. They did not know that assassins had nearly killed them, nor did they know that those assassins had disappeared without a trace.

Where had these assassins suddenly disappeared to?

The moment these assassins disappeared, they suddenly appeared in an unknown location. The sudden change in scenery, combined with the fact that they could not move their bodies, shocked them greatly. They appeared in a place full of darkness, and they could not see or sense anything within this space.

The leader of the assassins tried to move his body, but he could not. The only part he could move was his head. He tried to look through the darkness, but nothing could be seen. It was as if his sight had been completely covered by a blanket.

He did not even know that all of his men were nearby.

'Did I step into a trap? Where is this place?' he thought. The mysterious situation he was in made him tense, but he tried to calm himself down.

He did not want to shout, since he had no idea what this place was or what kind of situation he had fallen into.

Pow!

"Argh!"

Suddenly, he heard the sound of a body being struck by something, followed by a scream full of pain from one of his men. The scream echoed around him, making him turn his head toward its direction.

"Hey, is there somebody here?" he finally spoke in a hushed voice, and many voices echoed in response.

"I'm here, my lord."

"My lord, I'm here."

"My lord, where is this place?"

He heard all the voices of his men, which shocked him. All of them had been captured in this place.

"Who was the one that screamed just now?" the leader finally asked. However, before anyone could answer—

Pow!

"Arghh!"

Another scream full of pain resounded. This time, it belonged to one of the voices that had just spoken. At this moment, the leader knew that someone outside of their team was also present among them, and whatever this person was doing, they were hurting his underlings.

"Who are you?! Show yourself!" he shouted as he kept trying to look into the darkness, but it was useless. He still could not see anything. The other assassins also realized that there was another presence in this place, and whatever that presence was doing, it was not good.

"Hey, show yourself!"

"Don't hide behind the darkness, you fucker!"

The assassins tried to mock whoever had trapped them here, hoping to force the person to reveal themselves, but—

"Argh!"

Another scream of agony suddenly resounded. It was as if the attacker was completely ignoring their shouts and mockery. Their hearts were filled with panic, as they did not know what was happening, and they could not see or sense anything around them with their spiritual sense.

Even so, they kept shouting toward whoever had trapped them here, hoping the attacker would make a mistake. If that happened, they might find a way to escape this place. They had not killed even a single enemy yet, and yet they had already been captured without knowing how.

Dying like this would be too shameful.

However, as time passed, another scream of pain echoed, and they understood that it would keep happening until all of them went through whatever that figure was doing to them. Whatever was done to their comrade must have been terrible, because not a single voice came from the one who had just screamed.

Seeing that the situation seemed to be getting much worse, the assassins decided it would be better to commit suicide using the poison already prepared in their mouths.

But, before they could bite the small poison capsule, they suddenly realized they could not move their mouths at all. They could not move their heads either and could only move their eyes.

This terrified them, and they quickly thought of another method of suicide, which was to blow their own dantian.

However, before they could trigger their dantian to start the process of blowing it up, they suddenly found that they could not circulate their energy. A moment later, they felt sharp pain in their abdomens, right where their dantian was located, as a punch struck them hard.

It happened so fast that the time between each person's scream was only a split second.

The leader felt the same thing as a punch hit his dantian with tremendous force, shattering it completely. He wanted to scream his lungs out at how unbearable the pain was, but he could not. The pain of a destroyed dantian was something no cultivator would ever want to experience.

The leader felt his cultivation slipping away rapidly, and he could not even express his agony as the cultivation he had gathered throughout his life slowly dissipated.

The place remained completely silent for a few minutes until the leader finally sensed someone standing right in front of him. Cold sweat dripped from his forehead, and he did not know whether it was because of the pain or the tense feeling at this moment.

Suddenly, he felt his head being grabbed before another wave of pain surged through it. The pain grew unbearable, and combined with the pain of his destroyed dantian, he finally fainted.

However, before his sight turned into complete darkness, he saw a pair of blue eyes looking at him calmly. Those blue eyes became the last thing he saw before he closed his own for good.

-----

Inside Aldrian's tent, there was no one present, but a moment later a spatial crack suddenly opened and Aldrian stepped out of it. After he came through, the spatial crack closed again.

He had just come out of a secret realm, and at this moment that secret realm collapsed, killing everyone inside it.

There was no sign on Aldrian that he had just killed anyone. He simply adjusted his sleeve slightly, then sat beside a small table and picked up a cup of tea before taking a sip. It was the tea he had poured earlier, before creating the small secret realm he made specifically for those assassins—a secret realm with darkness-law properties.

He had teleported all of the assassins inside that realm before breaking their dantian and looking into their memories. He wanted to see whether they knew anything related to what he sought.

But unfortunately, they did not know the thing he wanted to know, which was the location of Hersedolf.

However, he did obtain useful information about the whereabouts of these assassins, which he could spread to the other forces. Their headquarters had also not yet been attacked by the alliance forces, which made them still able to operate effectively.

Their headquarters were located near the south pole of the world, and he could reach it tomorrow if he kept teleporting throughout the night.

'I think I need to change the plan. I need to visit their nest first,' he thought as he put down the teacup.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 889 - 889: Knowing His Location

[ 1,519 words ]

Time passed by and another day had come. The sun in the Red Mist Star was already at the highest point of the world. The battle across the world was getting more tense, and the alliance forces kept pushing the devils to the edge.

Inside one of the cities that had not yet been attacked by the alliance forces and was still far from the frontline, Heserdolf was inside a big mansion. He sat inside a private room with another devil whose cultivation was much higher than his.

In front of him was one of the few peak pseudo-immortal-stage devils who had not followed Rulleus to the central star cluster. He was the one responsible for leading the devils in this region, and the city Heserdolf was in was the center of this region. His name was Argus.

Heserdolf's expression showed a headache as he massaged his temple, and in fact, for the last few weeks his expression had mostly been like that. The devil in front of him showed a frown as he also felt concerned about the recent development of the war.

"Those bastards from the Ancient Blue Gate World are getting closer to this region, and at most, a month from now they will arrive in this city with their troops if they keep moving according to their current pattern. Well, I doubt they will just fly directly into this city using an interstellar vessel because they would be besieged from behind as well," Argus said.

"We already lost contact with the Ragmur region and the Ferdilis region, and because of that, we really cannot reach or communicate with the troops in the southern pole. The assassins' work is also not effective enough to dwindle the enemy's power. It is even the opposite, since we already lost many assassins because the enemies seem to know how our assassins operate," he continued.

"Our spies and reconnaissance teams were also quickly discovered, which made us blind to their strength and movement. The only thing we can depend on to track their movement is the information that comes from the places they have conquered."

"The reinforcement from other worlds that have not yet been attacked will only arrive in the next three days, and even when they arrive, we don't know if they can stop the enemies. The central star cluster really brought many of their powerhouses this time."

Heserdolf released a heavy sigh.

"My lord, in my opinion, this world is a lost cause and it's much better if we abandon this world and consolidate our forces in the farthest world of this star cluster, Aberon. I think that is the best solution for our current problem," Argus added.

"Even if we escape toward Aberon, we still have to fight them with everything we have, and we might still lose," Hesperdolf said, and then he gritted his teeth.

"If only most of our powerhouses had not followed His Highness toward the central star cluster, we would still have the strength to fight them. Damn that man named Aldrian," he cursed with full anger as his aura flared.

Argus's frown deepened. "As I thought, the rumor about him seems true. With his power, I doubt that His Highness's troops, even with support from our forces here could really conquer the Ancient Blue Gate World."

He was one of the devils who leaned toward believing the rumor about Aldrian.

With how huge and solid the rumor in the central star cluster was, he doubted that those cultivators were simply playing psychological warfare against the devils. The scale was too big and too abrupt to be a mere rumor. That was why he decided to stay and not follow Rulleus to the central star cluster.

Now that the figure named Aldrian seemed to have come here personally, he believed it would be better for them to retreat first and plan for a counterattack from a safe distance.

As Hesperdolf was still thinking about how he should move forward, a communication artifact inside his pouch gave off an incoming signal. He took out the artifact and activated it to hear what the other side had to say.

"My lord, I think we have a problem. Something happened in the Red Tower's main hall."

Hearing that, Hesperdolf frowned.

"What happened?" he asked.

-----

In a place far from where Hesperdolf was, there was a long mountain range. The mountain range had dangerous terrain and natural poisonous air that covered a large part of the area. The poisonous air was caused by the existence of many poisonous herbs spread throughout the mountain.

This was one of the places in the Red Mist Star that even the devils did not want to explore or enter. Even peak pseudo-immortal-stage devils did not dare to underestimate this place.

However, in this mountain range, there was a secret that not all devils knew. It was the location of the main headquarters of the Red Tower, the assassins' group of the devils.

In the deeper part of the mountain range, there was a cave on the rocky cliff, protected by a concealment formation. Normally, even if people passed by this place, they would not see any cave here.

However, at this moment, if anyone passed by, they could see the cave. That was because the concealment formation had been destroyed.

In the deeper part of the cave, there was nothing strange, and it looked like a normal cave. But as the cave reached further inside, bloodstains could be seen, followed by many dead bodies. The conditions of the corpses were varied.

Some were split as if a sword had cut them in half. Some had their bodies crushed to the point they were unrecognizable. There were also some who had simply dropped dead without any visible wounds, except for the horrified expressions on their faces.

The corpses released devil aura, which clearly showed that these bodies were devil cultivators, and they were wearing the same attire as the assassins.

Deeper into the cave, there were more hidden formations. This time, there were many trapping formations and killing formations. Even a pseudo-immortal-stage cultivator would find it challenging to breach this many traps and killing formations. One wrong move and they could die here.

But those formations had also been broken, and the assassins' corpses were scattered in many places.

Moving even deeper, one would finally find a large space big enough to build a full building complex. In this vast and high underground space, there was a complex of buildings, and in the middle of it stood a large twenty-floor pagoda tower.

At this moment, the complex that was usually full of activity was silent, and all the buildings had been damaged, burned, or entirely collapsed. Flames engulfed many parts of the complex, with corpses lying here and there. Only the crackling of fire could be heard in this space.

Inside the damaged pagoda tower, which was also engulfed in flames, many corpses were scattered from the lowest floor to the highest. At the top floor, a red-haired figure with a bloodied sword in his grasp was reading a scroll. Near him was a headless corpse releasing a peak pseudo-immortal-stage aura.

This red-haired figure was Aldrian.

At this moment, he was reading the scroll that contained many secret pieces of information regarding the Red Tower and the devils as a whole.

Aldrian had arrived in this region a few hours ago after traveling here by continuously teleporting throughout the entire night. Not long after he arrived, he immediately looked for the headquarters of the Red Tower, located in this mountain range based on the memories of the assassins he killed last night.

After he arrived at their headquarters, he did not waste any time wreaking havoc here, killing any assassins he saw. He also met the true leader of the Red Tower, who was now the headless corpse near him.

He did not have the chance to look into the leader's memories, because the man had actually committed suicide using a unique method by destroying his own soul with a special rare poison he had planted in his own head.

Aldrian thought the leader was really creative in the way he chose to die, but also crazy. But it gave him a lesson for the future. He would be more careful to check the prisoners's souls quickly if he caught someone alive.

With nothing to be gained from the leader, he simply beheaded him. He would have to look for the information he wanted elsewhere in this place.

After searching for some time, he finally found the scroll he was reading now. And after reading it for a while, he smiled as he finally found what he was looking for.

'I see, you are in there,' he thought.

What he found was the current location of Hesperdolf. The Red Tower had to take orders from their leader, and they had to keep information about the leader's location so they could stay in contact with him.

This information was exactly what he needed so he could end the war in the Red Mist Star much faster.

'But his location... if I remember correctly, then the nearest troops in that region are the Beast Continent's troops led by Dragon King and Phoenix Queen,' Aldrian thought.

'Well, let's inform them then. Let them be the ones who kill Hesperdolf.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 890 - 890: Reinforcement

[ 1,613 words ]

After destroying the Red Tower's headquarters, Aldrian returned to the base camp. He changed the plan for the troops that united with him, which was to let them rest for another one day. They would only continue their attacks after he took care of the Red Tower and after planning regarding Hesperdolf's location.

After Aldrian returned to the base camp, he walked toward his interstellar vessel and established a connection with the Dragon King's interstellar vessel. At this moment, the Dragon King and Phoenix Queen, along with the troops from other powers from the Beast Continent, were in the middle of their journey to their next targets.

The moment they connected to Aldrian and saw his face through the screen, they immediately showed their respect with slightly lowered heads.

"Your majesty."

Aldrian nodded. "How are you and your troops doing? Is everything good?" he asked.

"There are not many problems, Your Majesty. Everything is still within plan, and at this moment, we are still on our journey to our next targets," the Dragon King answered.

Aldrian nodded. "Good, but I have to apologize because I have to change the plan for your targets at this moment. There is a development that will make our war in this world much shorter than we thought."

The Dragon King and Phoenix Queen raised their eyebrows in wonder, but they still nodded.

"What is the development, Your Majesty? If this could shorten the war, then it will be good," the Dragon King said.

"The location of the current leader of the devils, who replaced Xarz, has already been found, and his location appears to be nearest to you." Hearing that, the two royalties understood its significance, and they understood why Aldrian had to change the plan.

"I want you and your troops to attack Vurdulic City in the Carpien Continent. That city is where Hesperdolf, the current leader, is building his command post. With him gone, the devils in this world will lose their direction, and we can deal with them much more effectively," Aldrian added.

"Could you do it? I think it will be quite a tough battle because Hesperdolf is hiding there. As far as I know, there will be some strong powerhouses in that continent, and I suggest a surprise attack from space for a quick battle. I don't want you to be besieged from many after you land in the middle of the continent."

The Dragon King and Phoenix Queen smiled when they heard that, and the Dragon King cupped his hand.

"We will succeed, Your Majesty. The next time we communicate, I will bring good news for you. Powerhouses in that continent? Well, I hope they can give good resistance, because until this moment, there is no one who can withstand my power," he said with full confidence.

"Your Majesty, we will surely bring good news to you. Those devils will have no chance against us," the Phoenix Queen also said with full confidence.

Aldrian smiled and nodded. "Alright, I'm glad you sound so confident and enthusiastic. Still, be careful. They might prepare something for you once you arrive there and Hesperdolf is cornered."

"Yes, Your Majesty," the Dragon King and Phoenix Queen answered in unity.

"Also, regarding the assassins, I have already taken care of their headquarters. You don't have to worry about assassins continuously coming. What you need to do is deal with the remaining assassins still out there disturbing your troops if they come to you," Aldrian continued.

"I have already obtained the whereabouts of some of these assassins, and I want you to spread this information to the other Beast Continent forces that are not with your groups. These assassins are hiding in some of their hideouts along the troops' path." Aldrian then told them the names of the areas where the assassins were located. He only told the places near the Beast Continent forces.

"Alright, we will spread it, Your Majesty," the Dragon King said after Aldrian told them the whereabouts.

Aldrian nodded. "Alright, be careful on your mission. May you succeed," he said before he cut off the communication.

After communicating with the beasts, Aldrian also connected to the other forces of the Ancient Blue Gate World to tell them about the assassins' matter. They were also targeted by the assassins, as the Red Tower used all their branches across the world to attack the alliance forces.

After Aldrian finished telling the others the information, he cut off the communication and walked out from the control room. For today, there was nothing special to do, so he decided to walk toward Angelica's location.

He wanted to talk to her at this moment, or more specifically, he wanted to tease her.

He walked with a good mood and a smile on his face.

-----

Three days later, a group of forty-five interstellar vessels appeared from the wormhole near the space of the Red Mist Star. These were the devils' reinforcements that came from the worlds that had not yet been attacked by the alliance forces.

The armada was led by a peak pseudo-immortal stage devil, and at this moment, this leader was inside the control room, looking at the Red Mist Star through the screen. The leader was a middle-aged man with black hair and a fierce expression.

From his expression, irritation was clear because of the bad news that kept coming from some of the worlds under attack from the cultivators of the Central Star Cluster. He just did not understand how that was possible when Rulleus had brought many of their troops into the Central Star Cluster.

Weren't those cultivators supposed to stay in their own star cluster to help each other hold Rulleus's invasion? Why were so many of them here, even invading their star cluster?

This was the first time in his life that cultivators from the Central Star Cluster invaded them, and it made him angry. How dare these bastards invade their headquarters with their puny strength?

As the leader continued observing the Red Mist Star, his eyes caught something on the screen. The thing that drew his attention was a lone figure that looked small on the display. The lone figure was positioned directly in the path of their armada toward the Red Mist Star.

The leader narrowed his eyes and ordered the operators to zoom in toward the lone figure. After the zoom, he finally saw clearly a young man with long red hair looking in his direction with his hands behind his back. His gaze was calm, as if the sight of the approaching armada did not impress him.

The leader frowned deeply. He did not know who this figure was, but judging from the strangeness of someone floating alone in space right in their path, he assumed the figure might be an enemy.

"Arzen, kill that man," the leader ordered the man beside him.

"Yes, my lord," Arzen answered before he walked out of the control room. The leader kept watching the figure, but then he froze when suddenly another figure appeared. He frowned again, because this second figure had the exact same face and attire as the first one.

It was as if they were identical twins.

He kept his focus on the twins when he suddenly saw the newcomer take out a sword and lift it as he pointed it upward. He wondered what this figure wanted to do, and then his eyes widened in shock as a blinding light shot out from the sword.

The blinding light then shaped itself into a giant golden pillar with a length so great that even he did not know how far it extended.

His danger sense triggered, sending goosebumps across his body, and he shouted toward the operators,

"Raise the barrier! Fall back! Don't approach that man!"

But it was too late. He saw the figure swing his sword downward toward his direction.

Zmmm! Rumble! Boom! Rumble!

The leader's interstellar vessel was instantly split into two like a hot knife cutting through butter. The vessel was destroyed on the spot, and the leader was killed instantly as he had no time to escape. He never expected the sword strike to be that fast.

The golden pillar did not stop as it swung in another direction toward the other vessels. The pillar swept through everything in its path, destroying any vessel it touched. All of them were easily cut apart, with explosions bursting from several vessels and killing everyone inside. Even the vessels that tried to escape suffered the same fate, swept away by the pillar.

The pillar's movement was fast, following the movement of the sword. It was as if the one using the sword technique did not feel any heaviness from this great technique and simply swung his sword with ease. He only swung in the direction of the vessels, and they were instantly cut apart.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Explosions trembled through space as all of the vessels were destroyed, killing most of the devils inside. There were some who used their talismans to escape, and they shot in the opposite direction, flying farther away from the Red Mist Star. But they were also swept away by the golden pillar, obliterating their existence.

The once silent space suddenly turned into a field of fireworks.

After destroying the devils' reinforcements, the figure which was undoubtedly Aldrian stopped his technique, and the golden pillar disappeared before he stored the sword inside his storage ring.

He was with his avatar, whom he had tasked with patrolling the space to anticipate the devils's reinforcements, something Aldrian already knew after reading the information inside the Red Tower's headquarters.

The moment his avatar saw the armada, Aldrian transferred his consciousness into the avatar and created his domain there. With that, he took care of the reinforcements coming from the other worlds.

Aldrian observed the destruction he had just created, then looked behind him toward the Red Mist Star.

'I think they almost arrived at this moment.'

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 891 - 891: Surprise Attack**

[ 1,634 words ]

In Vurdulic City where Hersedolf stayed, he seemed to be waiting for something as he looked at the sky, and his gaze appeared confused.

'Why are they not reporting at this moment? Isn't it supposed to be the time they arrived?' he thought.

The thing he was waiting for was the reinforcements from the other worlds. He needed them to strengthen the defence and also to strike back at the enemy alliance force.

Today was the day they were supposed to arrive, but even now there was no sign or report saying they were already near.

**BOOM!**

Suddenly, an explosion erupted in the city, and its shockwave spread across a large part of it, damaging many buildings. Hersedolf did not waste time as his body appeared outside, and he saw what had happened.

A strike from a beam cannon that came from space had hit the city, destroying part of it and killing many devils. His senses picked up something descending from the sky quickly before he finally saw an interstellar vessel emerging from the clouds.

"Raise the barrier!" Hersedolf shouted his order as sweat dropped from his forehead. He did not expect that the cultivators from the central star cluster would invade this place directly from space. He did not know why they attacked this place so suddenly, so it was good to assume that they were here because they knew his location.

'How did they find me this quickly?' he thought in frustration. 'To think that they would just barge in here. Do they think they do not need to pay attention to the other troops from the nearby cities and strongholds and simply let themselves be besieged?'

The vessel floated below the clouds as it quickly disembarked many troops, and all of them flew directly toward the city. At the forefront, the Phoenix Queen was the fastest, followed by her troops, while the Dragon King and his forces came behind.

Most of these beasts had already transformed into their beast forms, and their number in the tens of thousands made the devils below feel chills.

The thousands of giant bodies coming in their direction were terrifying. Moreover, most of them were dragons and phoenixes. They were powerful beings already known across the continent, and with thousands of them gathered here, this would be an extremely tough battle.

The barrier was still in the process of closing, and from its speed it would finish only after some of the beasts entered the city. Hersedolf, who was watching it, felt nervous and restless, and there was no moment like this when he wanted the barrier to close instantly.

He saw the Dragon King and the Phoenix Queen among the attackers, and his chest turned cold. He could only think about escaping again.

However, he had already run out of escape talismans, and the only thing he could use was the warp gate in the city. The problem was that the warp gate was near the blast from earlier. He did not know whether it was still intact or not, and if it was destroyed, then he would have no means of escape.

He would have to fight his way out of here in the worst case.

He kept watching the invasion force and kept hoping for the barrier to close faster. However, while the barrier was still in the middle of closing, it suddenly stopped. It was as if something was blocking the process, as if they were trying to push it but could not.

This shocked Hesperdolf, and he looked toward the direction where he sensed the disturbance. He saw the Dragon King stretch out his hand, and he finally understood the cause.

'He is blocking the barrier's completion using space laws.'

The space became harder, almost as if it had turned solid. Hesperdolf was shocked that the Dragon King could control such a wide area of space with that level of precision. He gritted his teeth.

'As expected of one of the strongest beings under the heaven.' He knew that the battle was imminent at this point, and this battle would decide his life or death.

The barrier created a large gap at the top of the dome, and the beasts rushed toward it before finally entering.

"Hahahaha, attack, attack! Don't let any of those bastards live!" one of the dragons shouted in excitement.

The other beasts also quickly entered the city, and without hesitation they used their respective attack techniques. The dragons in their dragon forms unleashed their dragon breath that could even burn the space itself. The phoenixes were the same, and with their fiery bodies, anything in their path burned to a crisp.

The city instantly fell into chaos in many areas as the devils tried to resist. They attacked the beasts with their elemental techniques, but the beasts were far stronger than them and did not even bother to evade, continuing their assault without pause.

The city was quickly engulfed in flames, and above the burning city, the Phoenix Queen in her human form was almost reaching the mansion where Hesperdolf stayed. Hesperdolf had already hidden in the underground shelter the moment he saw the beasts pouring into the city, and the Phoenix Queen seemed to be flying towards his direction as if searching for someone or something.

He assumed she was looking for him, which made him decide to hide in the underground shelter near the mansion so she would not detect him. He knew he was done for if she ever found him.

As the Phoenix Queen approached the mansion, she saw a peak pseudo-immortal devil flying toward her and attacking with a sword slash. The slash cut through space and even created a rift in its path, moving at a speed that even pseudo-immortals would struggle to follow.

However, the Phoenix Queen evaded the attack with ease as she shifted to the side and continued forward. The one attacking her was Argus, and at this moment his face

looked solemn. He could not underestimate the Phoenix Queen, as she was a well-known figure and one of the most powerful beings under the heaven.

Her flame had enough heat to burn space itself and even ignite the heaven and earth energy in nature. In her phoenix form, she would be immune to all elemental attacks unless her enemy could overwhelm her flame.

Argus then swung his sword, which was a middle divine-grade artifact, repeatedly toward the Phoenix Queen. However, with her speed and agility, she could easily evade every strike. He tried to keep his distance while continuously attacking, but she moved so swiftly it was as if she could see the future.

He attempted to use illusion laws on her to distract her, but his illusion was instantly destroyed by her flame, and the backlash hit him. He felt pain in his mind as his illusion was burned away. Even so, he continued his attacks.

She evaded all of them until she finally appeared right in front of Argus, her speed far surpassing his. He then saw the Phoenix Queen stretch her hand toward him as if she intended to choke him. He narrowly dodged, but her body suddenly exploded with flames that spread outward.

Argus, still close to her, instantly raised his barrier technique, but it shattered the moment the flames touched it. He raised both arms to shield himself from the fire, but the moment the flames brushed his hands and body, he felt his flesh burn. He also felt as if his lungs were melting, his heart was about to burst, and even his soul was heating up.

"Agh!" he shouted in pain as the flames left severe burns on any part of him they touched, and even his flesh began to cook.

Argus gritted his teeth as he withstood the pain in his hands and body. He finally decided to use his devil form. Even after transforming, he still felt the burning pain, but he ignored it and took the initiative to counterattack.

The Phoenix Queen, who saw him use his devil form, did not change her expression. Instead, she used another technique. She stretched her hands to both sides, flames appeared in her palms, and then the flames burst and shaped themselves into two whips.

The heat forced Argus to slow his advance, and he narrowed his eyes slightly. The Phoenix Queen, with a whip in each hand, attacked him. The movement of the whips was so fast that the space trembled, and the heat alone made Argus feel chills. He tried to evade the attacks, but the movement of the whips was unpredictable.

He blocked the whips with his sword repeatedly, and he noticed burn marks slowly appearing on the blade, which shocked him.

The whip could damage a divine-grade artifact!

He gritted his teeth as he flew at high speed, constantly evading and blocking the whips. He did not even have the smallest chance to counterattack.

As he was looking for a way to attack the Phoenix Queen, he suddenly heard the loud rumbling sound of a beam cannon attack. He glanced toward the source of the sound and couldn't help but feel a slight joy, because the beam cannon came from the interstellar vessel that had arrived from the nearby stronghold.

From four directions, many cruisers and two interstellar vessels appeared from the distance.

The beam cannon hit the alliance troops' vessel—or so he thought—until he finally saw that the Dragon King was actually blocking the beam cannon with his spatial manipulation.

Another beam cannon attack came from another vessel and shot directly toward the Dragon King, but he blocked it again using his spatial barrier. The space trembled heavily, and it looked as though it would almost tear open into a spatial rift.

But the barrier still held until the beam cannon finished its attack.

The Dragon King smiled as he looked at the many enemies approaching from all four directions. There were also two peak pseudo-immortal stage devils among them.

"It's my turn," he said before his body slowly began transforming.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 892 - 892: The Power of the Dragon King**

[ 1,497 words ]

The Dragon King's human form quickly transformed into a giant, long red dragon. His body reached more than five hundred kilometers. His aura became far more terrifying as he no longer held it back and released it freely, as if he wanted everyone here to sense it.

For beasts in general, they couldn't help but feel their souls tremble and their instincts scream at them to respect the Dragon King. For the dragons, the effect was much

greater. They not only felt respect, but they even had the urge to prostrate before the Dragon King in worship.

This was caused by bloodline suppression that strongly affected not only their bodies' reactions but also their souls. It was an innate response in every beast that possessed lower purity toward a being whose bloodline purity and characteristics were closer to their gods.

The dragons' souls trembled, and they were slightly disturbed in the middle of their battles or their fun.

At this moment, the devils also looked in the Dragon King's direction. His aura was too terrifying and too suffocating to be ignored, and they instinctively turned to see him.

The incoming devil reinforcements also looked toward the Dragon King, and they couldn't help but feel a chill in their souls.

They had to fight that?!

The devils' interstellar vessel stopped its movement as they began to disembark more troops while still in the air. They also pointed their beam cannons toward the Dragon King's giant body.

The two pseudo-immortal-stage devils also focused themselves on the Dragon King. After sensing his terrifying aura, they knew they had to take care of him first before thinking about helping anyone else. With the Dragon King here, anything would be rendered useless if he decided to interfere.

After the Dragon King transformed into his dragon form, his gaze swept toward the devil reinforcements that were approaching the city at high speed. His gaze was sharp, and there was even a trace of mockery in it. As a dragon, he was confident and arrogant. If he believed he could take care of these devils on his own, then he was certain he could do it.

He lifted his giant body higher, and each of his movements made the space tremble. The devils' interstellar vessel followed the Dragon King's movement with their beam cannon. They had already recharged for another shot.

The two pseudo-immortal-stage devils had already taken on their devil forms, and they quickly flew toward the Dragon King. Their intention was to defeat him as soon as possible, so they planned to use everything from the start.

Without any hesitation, they finally started their attack. One of them used his body cultivation power, and the other used a combination of wind and lightning.

One released a powerful punch that pierced through space, while the other created a storm from his palm. Strong winds and lightning surged outward, rushing toward the Dragon King.

The interstellar vessels also fired their beam cannons. A rumbling sound echoed across the area.

The Dragon King floated below the clouds, and suddenly the space around the city became distorted, creating a shield that covered the city's edge. The people who saw it widened their eyes in shock. They could sense powerful space laws within the distorted space and the complexity woven into it.

The shield reached up into the sky and protected the Dragon King. The moment the beam hit the distorted space—

Zmmm!

The beam entered the distorted space as if it was consumed, leaving no destruction or explosion behind. The attacks from the two peak pseudo-immortal-stage devils also struck the distorted space, and their attacks were instantly consumed just the same.

The people who saw this were shocked, because four powerful attacks that could easily kill even a peak pseudo-immortal-stage cultivator were blocked so easily. The two pseudo-immortal-stage devils also felt their hearts shudder, since their combined strikes were actually stopped by this spatial distortion.

But then they sensed something from within the distortion and couldn't help widening their eyes again.

"Evade!" one of them shouted, right before the strikes that had hit the distorted space suddenly shot toward the approaching devil troops. One of the beam attacks came from the north, yet its beam suddenly shot toward the west. Another was fired from the east, but its beam appeared in the south.

The devils' strikes were the same. Their techniques were redirected in other directions, all of them aimed at their own troops. The devils, who did not expect the attacks to be redirected at them, had no time to evade or defend themselves. They were instantly swept away by all of those attacks.

Tens of thousands instantly died, since the attacks were powerful peak pseudo-immortal-stage strikes. This caused chaos in the devils' ranks as they scattered from the impact.

One of the peak pseudo immortal stage devils who had comprehended space laws saw this and showed a solemn expression.

'That is not only space distortion to disperse the attack but also spatial displacement. Everything that enters that distorted space will come out from another direction,' he thought.

What the Dragon King did was similar to what Aldrian used when he opened a spatial rift to block enemies's attacks and redirect them elsewhere.

However, the Dragon King's technique was more complex, since it covered an enormous area and also contained other laws. For example—

Suddenly, the distorted space suddenly grew hot, and blue flames immediately appeared, engulfing the distorted space.

At this moment, a wall of blue flame blocked the city and rose into the sky, creating a towering pillar. The sight was truly extraordinary, and anyone who saw it couldn't help but stop what they were doing.

The blue flame's heat spread to more than a thousand kilometers, forcing everyone to protect themselves from the intense temperature.

Those closest to the flames inside the city even felt their skin burning, which made all of them move further away to lessen the heat.

The battle seemed to pause for a moment, except for the fight of the Phoenix Queen. She did not appear affected or impressed by the Dragon King's technique and continued attacking Argus. Argus, unable to focus because of everything happening around him, had already lost one of his arms as her whip sliced through it.

The Phoenix Queen's attacks were truly relentless, and from her expression she did not seem tired at all. Her face remained calm as she swung her whips and occasionally unleashed her flames through her body.

He gritted his teeth and started to think that he had no chance against the monster in front of him. He was not given any time to strategize his movements or gather strength to unleash a powerful technique.

As he continued to evade, block, and sometimes counterattack, he sensed the wall of flame suddenly rolling from the top. The flame wall that had reached the sky fell like a giant wave, spreading outward directly toward the hundreds of thousands of devils that came as reinforcement.

Its falling speed was tremendous, something its massive scale did not reflect at all. The space itself burned, and it even left spatial rifts in many places along the flame's path. The space broke apart with flames burning through it, revealing the void behind it in scattered pieces like a shattered puzzle.

The height of the blue flame reached the devils's reinforcement formation, which shocked all of them and made them instantly attempt to escape. But the flame's speed was already far faster than most of the devils. The two peak pseudo-immortal-stage devils had already escaped the moment they sensed the flames falling toward them.

Whoosh!

The giant wave of flame swept across the area below and spread an inferno for more than ten thousand kilometres. The devils caught in it stood no chance. They did not feel pain or anything at all as their bodies instantly turned to ash. The devils' interstellar vessels and cruisers were all engulfed in flames, their barriers collapsing a split second after the fire touched them.

The large hulls of the interstellar vessels were already burning and heavily damaged, with holes of various sizes across them. The flames also reached their interiors and killed everyone inside.

They then fell from the sky like flies that suddenly died.

The space across the inferno became wobbly, and rifts started to form throughout the region because the space could no longer endure the heat.

It was one of the Dragon King's mass destruction techniques that he had not used for a long time, the Wave of Inferno.

The sight made everyone feel chills. This level of destruction was something that even pseudo-immortal-stage cultivators found despairing.

Argus felt that despair. Is this the power of the Dragon King? He suddenly felt that everything was really useless. Their resistance was meaningless. The Dragon King was a monster of his own kind, and there was also the Phoenix Queen.

He gritted his teeth as he decided to escape.

But before he could act on the thought in his mind, the Phoenix Queen suddenly used another trick and the tips of her whips changed shape into a sword. This happened in a split second, and the sword launched from behind Argus.

Pierced!

The sword pierced his chest.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 893 - 893: Objective Achieved

[ 1,515 words ]

Argus, who did not have time to evade the sword, felt sudden pain and suffocation as the sword pierced him from behind. The sword struck directly through his heart and burst it, killing him instantly.

Even in death, his face still showed shock and despair in his eyes. The sword's flame embedded in his body then burned him completely. The fire ignited from the inside outward and cremated him on the spot.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

At the same time, several large explosions shook the nearby mansion where Hesperdolf hid. The blasts destroyed the mansion and created several massive craters. Flames spread everywhere, and the devils' corpses lay scattered with burn wounds and severed limbs.

In one of the giant craters, there was a sign of a destroyed underground structure. In the midst of the rubble, a faint movement appeared as a hand pushed away the debris burying its owner.

Hesperdolf's wounded figure slowly emerged from the rubble with difficulty. He gritted his teeth as he endured the pain of the burn wounds covering his body. Although he was a vampire with strong regeneration, these injuries were something even his recovery struggled to mend.

That happened because the explosion just now was a technique of the Phoenix Queen. He did not know how, but small birds shaped flame suddenly appeared inside the underground shelter. The flame birds were only the size of his palm, yet they could explode with power strong enough to kill pseudo immortal stage cultivators.

Thanks to his protective talisman, he did not instantly turn into ash and ended up only heavily wounded. Unfortunately, phoenix flame was not like normal flame.

Its properties could prevent regeneration. The flame acted like a poison that blocked any form of recovery, which meant any wound caused by it could leave an everlasting effect on the victim's body if they did not have any means to erase the phoenix flame's effect.

This was in direct contrast to another property of the phoenix flame that allowed it to regenerate severed limbs or heal any injuries. This was what they called the dual nature of phoenix flames, destruction and restoration.

Their flames could kill but also give life, an ability that made the phoenix race overpowered.

Heserdolf felt breathless as he tried to lean his body against the destroyed wall beside him. But then he sensed someone land near him, which made him slowly turn his head to the side.

He saw the Phoenix Queen looking at his face with her beautiful eyes, her expression calm. Several of the flame birds were still flying here and there, and one of them perched on the queen's shoulder. Heserdolf couldn't help but release a deep sigh. He knew that this was his time.

He could not escape his end when the Phoenix Queen was already right beside him.

But he did not want to fall without doing anything. With a quick and decisive move, he triggered his dantian to explode. However, before his dantian could fully ignited—

Slash!

The Phoenix Queen cut through his neck cleanly using the sword flame in her hand, severing his head. The ignition in his dantian stopped, and as his head rolled, his life ended right there.

The Phoenix Queen then retracted all of her techniques. The sword flame and the flame birds disappeared, before she burned Heserdolf's corpse. Her flame consumed his body into nothingness until not even ashes remained.

The Phoenix Queen did not change her expression the entire time. She simply considered this an easy task, as this devil was already cornered and had very little room to move. While fighting Argus, she had quietly released one of her techniques without him noticing—the flame sparrows.

She spread many small bird-shaped flames that flew to various parts of the mansion, and the sparrows were able to infiltrate the ground. As long as there was the smallest gap, the flames could enter it, allowing them to appear inside the underground shelter where Heserdolf was hiding. The sparrows, controlled by the Phoenix Queen, exploded after locating Heserdolf's position.

Basically, she was handling multiple tasks while battling Argus. If she focused only on fighting Argus, she could have killed him easily. However, she chose not to focus solely on the battle because she had sensed Heserdolf's presence earlier, before he hid in the underground shelter. That was why she used her technique to look for his location while also fighting Argus.

She believed that Heserdolf must have been cornered and lacked any real means of escape, because if he had such options, he would not have chosen to hide here and

would have attempted to flee. He should have known that he had no hope of facing their alliance in this place, which meant the only decision he should take was to escape.

She wanted to make sure she could kill Hesperdolf without giving him any chance to escape, so she used the element of surprise through the Flame Sparrows.

The Phoenix Queen looked in another direction and rose into the sky. She saw that the city had almost completely fallen into their hands. The devils had lost their morale after witnessing what the Dragon King did. Many of them chose to escape, only to be killed by other beasts in the end.

The Phoenix Queen did not find it surprising. After witnessing something like what the Dragon King did, the devils would naturally fall into despair. The wave of inferno was one of the Dragon King's mass destruction techniques, and she had already seen it once in the past when the Dragon King went to war against the devils on their continent.

And she also knew that he possessed something even more powerful.

She then looked toward the Dragon King. After unleashing his mass destruction, the Dragon King had already returned to his human form. He floated with his hands clasped behind his back, observing the destruction he had caused earlier.

He smiled as he felt satisfied after unleashing something like that and killing so many devils.

He couldn't help wanting to use the Wave of Inferno after seeing a large number of devils rushing in his direction. It was a rare occasion where he could freely unleash a technique he rarely used because of the scale of destruction it could cause. Without precise and strong control, this technique could even kill his own allies.

Even after unleashing a technique of that level, the Dragon King did not seem tired at all and continued observing the ongoing battle in the city.

Finally, after an hour of fighting, the city completely fell into their hands. After confirming that the city was fully cleared of devils and that Hesperdolf had died, the Dragon King contacted Aldrian to report the results of the battle.

-----

In the southern pole region of the Red Mist Star, Aldrian and his alliance were resting inside one of the towns they had already conquered. Not long after destroying the devils' reinforcement in space, Aldrian was inside his tent, meditating.

Suddenly, his communication artifact signaled an incoming communication. He took out the artifact while keeping his eyes closed and listened to the voice from the other side.

"Excuse me, Your Majesty. There is an incoming communication from the Dragon King. He sent his report saying he has succeeded in raiding Vurdulic City and killing Hersedolf. The city has fallen under our control, and they will stay in Vurdulic City to defend it from any devils trying to take it back."

Hearing that, Aldrian was stunned for a moment before he smiled.

"I see. Wait, connect back to Dragon King. I want to say something to him."

He opened his eyes and stood up, and his figure disappeared before reappearing outside the control room of his interstellar vessel. After he entered and waited for a moment, he finally saw the Dragon King on the screen.

"Congratulations on the success of the mission. But I heard that you want to stay in that city. Are you really okay with that? You and all of your troops will likely have to fight the entire power of the devils in the continent. You could leave, since our objective is already achieved, and attack the continent in the future with a more proper plan." Aldrian said with a smile.

"Thank you, Your Majesty, but it's fine. We can still hold on here, and there is nothing that could endanger us for now, so we decided to stay. It would be a shame to leave this city right after we conquered it. Moreover, with me and the Phoenix Queen here, no matter how many devils come, or even if the entire power of the continent arrives, I doubt they could retake this city with their current strength." The Dragon King replied.

Aldrian nodded. "I see. Then be careful. I do not doubt your power, but don't hesitate to retreat if you think it will be too much to defend the city."

"Yes, Your Majesty."

After that, they cut off the communication.

Aldrian took a deep breath, and he couldn't help but smile in a good mood. Now that their leader had disappeared, the devils in this world would fall into confusion and chaos. There would be no one left to manage what they needed to do.

This world would fall faster than he thought!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## **Chapter 894 - 894: The Future Plan for the World?**

[ 1,648 words ]

The war that engulfed the entire Red Mist Star kept going for another three weeks. The devils, who had already lost Hesperdolf as their leader, did not have anyone who could give them direction or strategy. They were blind to everything and were easily conquered by the alliance force.

The beasts of the Beast Continent also contributed greatly, not only by killing Hesperdolf but also by holding off many devils that tried to attack them in Vurdulic city. Their city, which was located in the middle of the continent, was like a sweet in the middle of an ants' nest.

They were surrounded by the devils' strongholds and cities, and all of them wanted to get rid of the beasts from Carpian continent. The devils tried attacking them almost every day.

However, the presence of the Dragon King and the Phoenix Queen really showed everyone that ultimate power could withstand any number of attackers. For peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators, anyone below them could be regarded as weaklings and even ants.

But for the Dragon King and the Phoenix Queen, who were already powerful even compared to fellow peak pseudo-immortal stage cultivators, taking care of anyone below that level was like sweeping dust with their hands.

It was an easy thing to do and did not require much effort. They could hold the city against millions of devils even on their own.

Even more amazingly, they had expanded their territory even before reinforcements from outside arrived. When the reinforcements finally came from outside the continent, the devils within the continent had already grown much weaker.

That was why they could conquer many of the devils' strongholds much more easily. The Carpian Continent fell within two weeks, much earlier than their prediction of one month.

With the fall of the Carpian Continent and the alliance force already spread everywhere across the world, only one region remained where the devils were gathered. This region was located at the south pole and was the most remote place in the world.

The devils were cornered and besieged from every direction in this region. They could not escape even if they tried to fly into space, since interstellar vessels and cultivators were already guarding the area above.

At this moment, almost the entire region had fallen under the alliance force, and the battle was taking place in the last city the devils still defended until the end. This city was also almost entirely conquered, with the devils cornered on one side of it.

The devils fought with everything they had, desperately trying to kill as many people as possible. But unfortunately for them, their efforts were useless, since the alliance force was much stronger, which made them unable to kill anyone.

The only thing they could do was commit suicide by exploding their dantian, but even that was ineffective.

The alliance force, which had many high-ranking cultivators, could protect their troops from the explosions. Moreover, Aldrian was also present in this city, observing the battle from the sky.

"Bastards! This is not the end! You will face the wrath of the Devil God! His Majesty the Vampire King will also not let you off! He will avenge us!" one of the devils shouted before being killed by cultivators from the alliance force.

"You will regret attacking us!" another shouted before he was also killed.

Their shouts, filled with threats, were useless against the alliance force, who kept pushing forward until only a few dozen devils remained. In desperation, those devils attempted to explode their dantian at the same time.

However, before they could truly explode, Emperor Rozwald, who was also present in this place, slashed with his sword, and the blade energy cut through every remaining devil. Their heads were severed almost at the same time, and their bodies collapsed as blood stained the ground.

Seeing the last remaining devils drop dead, the alliance force slowly relaxed their bodies, and many sighs of relief could be heard. They looked at Aldrian, who floated in the sky, and a moment later, Aldrian raised his fist toward the sky.

"We have won!"

"UWOOO!" The alliance troops shouted in excitement after hearing Aldrian's declaration. Some of the people shed tears, since they had been waiting for this moment. They were the descendants of ancestors who originally came from this world, and they had dreamed of returning to their ancestral land.

Although they did not know where their ancestors had lived in this world, that did not matter. As long as they could come back to this world, it was the same as fulfilling the dreams passed down through generations.

The war on the Red Mist Star, which had lasted for more than a month, could finally be said to be over. The incredible thing was that they managed to conquer this world, which had billions of devils, with fewer than ten million troops.

Thanks to their higher average cultivation and the detailed plan of attack, they could wipe out the devils easily even though they were greatly inferior in terms of numbers.

However, although the war in this world might be over, their battle was still not finished, since there might be devils hiding somewhere in this vast world.

Those devils could still become a threat to the lives of the alliance force or anyone who would visit this world. But for now, they would have to keep hiding, because all of their gathering places were already under the alliance's control.

While the devils continued hiding, the alliance could begin the process of rebuilding the world. With the war on the Red Mist Star finished, they could reconstruct some of the cities to make them more comfortable to live in.

But that was for later. For now, they would rest after battling continuously for more than a month. They had fought almost every day, moving from one location to another, conquering one place after another.

They had a target time that they needed to achieve so the devils would not have room to move or gather their strength.

Even though they rested between battles to replenish their energy or ease their bodies, their minds and bodies had still grown tired from the continuous fighting. For now, they needed a long period of relaxation. Let them think of nothing except resting and feeling happy.

Not long after the battle, the troops began building a temporary base in the city so they could rest. They were also planning a victory party for tonight, and Aldrian gave his approval.

Although their battle was still not over, and even the Fallen Star Cluster was still not fully liberated, they still needed to celebrate this great achievement.

Aldrian then sat down, leaning against the wall of a destroyed building. Many of his acquaintances gathered around him to converse with him. The leaders of the major territories of the Aster Empire were present, and Emperor Rozwald, Prince Ronwell, Queen Revania, and several others were also there.

Their faces showed happiness, and they sometimes laughed at the topics they discussed. As the conversation continued, Emperor Rozwald suddenly touched on a topic that caught the interest of several people around them.

"Your Majesty, my apologies for bringing this up at this moment. I know it may sound impolite, but what will you do with this world after this? Does Your Majesty have a plan for the future of this world?" he asked Aldrian.

Aldrian nodded in understanding. "Well, to be honest, when I thought about retaking the entire Fallen Star Cluster from the devils, I did not think much further than that. I did not have any specific plan for this world or for the entire Fallen Star Cluster. The only thing that mattered to me was liberating any place still occupied by the devils, to erase the threat to our lives."

"Maybe I will help this world develop until anyone who decides to stay and rebuild it can sustain themselves. At least, that is what I have in mind for now."

Emperor Rozwald nodded. "I see. But is Your Majesty not interested in expanding the Aster Empire's territory to this place? I mean, that would be normal and worthy for Your Majesty. You are the one who made all of this possible. We were able to retake this world from the devils because of you."

Aldrian smiled when he heard that. "No, I don't think I need to expand my empire's territory to this place. My current territory is enough for me. A territory that is too wide would be troublesome to govern."

The others understood Aldrian's reasoning, and it was reasonable. This place was too far, and it would be challenging to govern it from such a distance.

However, in their minds, they knew the future would not be that simple. Countless people already knew that Aldrian was the initiator of this war, and if they succeeded, the one who would receive the most credit would be him.

Although many other powers contributed to the war, Aldrian's presence in the first place was the factor that made victory in this war possible.

Many people would surely want to move into this world—no, not only this world but also the habitable worlds across the Fallen Star Cluster, and they would rebuild nations throughout it. They doubted that these people would avoid forming some kind of connection with Aldrian.

They could already imagine that many of these newborn nations, or the reborn of ancient nations, would in some way show their loyalty to Aldrian. For various reasons, they would want to tie their families or their nations to him.

They might become his vassals, or they might even voluntarily make themselves part of the Aster Empire's territory. Any close connection with Aldrian would be the best insurance for them, both now and in the future.

Aldrian was still smiling after answering the question. For him, he did not really think deeply about what he would do with this world after the war. But it was not as if he gained nothing from the war. No—he would gain something far more important than territory or anything similar. And that was—

Faith energy.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 895 - 895: The Other's Situation

[ 1,568 words ]

For mortals, faith energy is something useless because of the obvious reason that faith energy does not affect them whatsoever. However, for any divine beings, faith energy is more important compared to physical territory.

If any divine beings have the ambition to widen their physical territory, their main intent is usually to gather as much faith energy as possible.

After they conquer the land, they can farm the faith energy of the beings living there. Fear and reverence can be included as forms of faith energy, but they are weak. The strongest faith energy still comes from those who worship them sincerely, their believers as a god.

Divine beings will spread their faith across the land to raise the number of their believers and strengthen themselves. But physical territory is not something that is absolutely required to gather faith energy. Even someone outside their territory who holds faith in a god will still provide faith energy, making that god stronger.

Physical territory is only a supporting factor—something that makes things easier because they can manage everything within their territory more freely, without disturbance from other gods.

Usually, other gods did not want to spread their influence into another god's territory because that would be the same as a challenge to the host god.

The exception was gods with an expansionist mindset who liked to expand their influence and had no problem waging war against other gods. They would try to gain as many believers as possible without thinking of the consequences.

Aldrian was a special being who, although still undoubtedly mortal, had already attained some characteristics of divine beings.

One of them, of course, was his ability to utilize faith energy. At this moment, the faith energy he gathered truly boosted his power greatly. With his current cultivation, which reached the middle pseudo-immortal establishment stage a few weeks ago, he believed he could kill a middle pseudo-immortal stage opponent even without using his domain.

That was something extremely difficult to achieve even in the higher heavens.

Thanks to his reputation, he could gather that much faith energy.

As for the matter of the Red Mist Star, even if he did not expand his empire's territory there, he could still gather far more faith energy. Many people who would live in this world in the future would most likely have positive feelings toward him, and among them, some might even regard him as a god.

That alone was enough gain for him after the war, though he would certainly welcome any additional benefit.

"I see... that is truly commendable, Your Majesty. As expected of you," Emperor Rozwald said with a smile.

They continued to converse for a while before they dispersed. There were still some things they needed to handle in the aftermath of the war.

-----

Later, Aldrian also received reports from the other alliance forces in the other worlds. Basically, there were no problems on their side, and most of them had already conquered their entire world. That was because the sizes of those worlds were much smaller compared to the Red Mist Star, allowing them to conquer them much more quickly.

There were ten main planets in the Fallen Star Cluster, and the alliance forces had attacked seven of them. For now, with the Red Mist Star included, four had already been conquered. As for the remaining planets, it was only a matter of time before they were conquered entirely. They reported that their progress was good, and they had already taken most of the planet's land.

Aldrian was satisfied with the news, and he hoped they would succeed before he cut off the communication. There was also something he wanted to do now that he finally had a moment of peace after the war.

He intended to locate the world's faith energy gathering place. For the last few weeks, he had already tried to find it using his comprehension of faith energy. Because the

world's faith was different from the faith of normal beings, he had to use a different method to search for that place.

The world's faith energy was more abstract compared to normal faith energy, and the gathering place was most likely located deep underground.

He decided to utilize the support of the earth laws to locate the place and trace the faith energy. The earth element was the largest element that shaped the entire world, so he thought he could use it to find the exact location of the faith energy gathering place.

The result was that he could actually sense large faith energy spreading across the land. The faith energy did not seem to have a clear flow, but its presence was scattered throughout the ground.

However, Aldrian knew that the faith energy must have some kind of flow leading toward the gathering place. For the past few days, he had found clues about that location as he began to detect the movement of the world's faith energy much more clearly.

He hoped that today he could finally start his journey to that place.

-----

While Aldrian was busy with his own matters, in another world a war was still raging. On this planet, which was about twenty percent smaller than the Red Mist Star, the force from the Arantes Star was striking the devils hard.

They had already conquered ninety percent of the land, and at this moment they were attacking a large fortress, the strongest stronghold of the devils in this world. If this stronghold fell, then the rest would be much easier to conquer.

The fortress was already destroyed in most parts, and the alliance force continued to push forward. Among the alliance troops was a veiled woman whom the devils actively tried to escape from. She has cultivation at low pseudo immortal establishment stage, and although she wore a veil, anyone could still see her beauty.

However, right now her beauty was not what anyone focused on. Instead, they focused on her strength, strong enough that even the devils chose to evade her. With a sword in her grasp, she could kill many devils with each technique she unleashed.

Her movements were fast and firm, yet still held a graceful quality that made her sword technique resemble an art—an art of killing.

"Kill Sword Maiden first and abandon the others! Don't let her keep wrecking havoc!" one of the devils shouted, looking at the woman who was, in fact, the Sword Maiden. A

devil at low pseudo-immortal stage then quickly dashed toward the Sword Maiden. With his cultivation, he believed he could kill her easily.

The Sword Maiden knew that an enemy at this level was still dangerous for her, and that he could kill her. But she did not seem worried and continued killing the devils in front of her without mercy.

The devil unleashed his fire technique, sending a spear-shaped flame toward the Sword Maiden. However, before the spear could even approach her, a sword strike rushed in from the side, and another strike followed immediately at the devil himself.

The first strike destroyed the fire spear, while the second was so fast that the devil did not even realize he had been hit. A moment later, his body split cleanly into two.

Not far from the Sword Maiden, an old man with long hair and a short white beard held a sword in his grasp. He floated fifty meters above the ground. His aura was sharp like a sword, and his eyes showed a focused expression. He was the one who had unleashed that strike.

His expression, filled with focus, shifted into a smile as he turned to look at the Sword Maiden. His gaze was full of satisfaction, like a master looking proudly at his disciple.

He then swung his sword again to the side without even looking in the direction of his strike. It was a simple and fast motion, yet it was enough to create a long spatial rift that swallowed two devils.

Only their lower bodies remained, falling to the ground. Just like that, two devils at the pseudo-immortal stage were dead.

The battle continued for another half hour before the alliance force finally conquered the fortress entirely. With this stronghold fallen, the rest of the devils would be much easier to take care of.

The alliance force then began their post-battle procedures, creating purification formations and so on. While many people were working, the Sword Maiden observed the troops, and the old man from earlier approached her.

The Sword Maiden looked at him and slightly lowered her head.

"Master, thank you for your support," she said.

The old man smiled. "How could I let my disciple be harmed by those dirty beings? Not on my watch." He then let out a sigh. "It must have been a tiring month for you, fighting nonstop like that."

"Not really, Master. In fact, I'm glad that I'm here not long after my breakthrough. I can test my newfound power much more easily. There is no better chance than this," she replied.

Her master smiled and looked in another direction.

"Anyway, at this speed, I think we can say that we will end this war much faster. I also received a report that Aldrian the Great and his force have already finished their war in the Red Mist Star."

Hearing that, the Sword Maiden raised her eyebrows, then nodded in understanding. It was not surprising for the strongest world to fall quickly with his presence there.

"Ah, I really hope I can talk to Aldrian the Great face to face after this war. Maybe I could find enlightenment that finally will push me to a higher comprehension," her master said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

[ 1,487 words ]

Sword Maiden nodded after hearing her master.

"Unfortunately, master is in seclusion. If not, you could have met him earlier. I believe master could benefit from him. Even I managed to break through much faster than I anticipated after only watching all of his actions recently. His swordsmanship is truly something that could give anyone enlightenment even if they only see him." she said.

Her master raised his eyebrows and smiled.

"This is the first time I have heard you praise someone like that. This makes me even more eager to meet him. From your opinion, what kind of person is Aldrian the Great?"

"Well, I could say that he has quite an interesting character..." she then told her master all of her experiences meeting him when he was in seclusion.

While the master and disciple discussed Aldrian and the forces of Arantes Star making great progress, the situation of the other forces in different worlds was also good. In one of the worlds where Akares Star's force was attacking, they had already conquered the entire world much earlier compared to Red Mist Star.

At this moment, they had started to rebuild some of the places so the area could become more proper for long-term living. Although it was still not permanent, at least

they were no longer only tents but already buildings. They planned to build more proper structures after the war in the Fallen Star Cluster was entirely over.

In one of the biggest cities, an alliance force led by the Valroy family was building their temporary accommodation. As the troops worked on constructing the structures, inside one of the wooden buildings that had already been completed, two figures were sitting around a table with teacups on it.

Randolf was with his father, Patriarch Elliot, and Randolf had just entered the room to start their conversation.

"Red Mist Star finally fell. It was much faster than I predicted. To conquer that big world in only a little more than a month with that number of troops... as expected of Aldrian the Great," Patriarch Elliot commented.

Randolf nodded. "Well, with him there, those devils stood no chance, so I'm not really surprised."

There was a moment of silence as Randolf sipped his tea and enjoyed it before Patriarch Elliot opened his lips again.

"So, what is your plan for this world? You must have something in mind, right? We are not just following Aldrian the Great into war because we want to look good in front of him, am I correct?"

Randolf smiled. "Of course, Father. We will gain extra benefits in this war. We came here not only to win the war but also to spread our influence and our god's teaching."

"Will this not become a problem if Aldrian the Great finds out about it? Will he be okay with it?" Patriarch Elliot asked.

"Well, as long as we do not give any sign that we are the ones behind it, it is fine. Moreover, I do not think Aldrian the Great has much time to check every world when he already seems busy with his own matters in the future," Randolf answered.

Although he believed that Aldrian was an apostle of some gods, most likely from the rebel side, Aldrian was still a mortal with many limitations. Aldrian would not have the means to check every individual in every world, and he could not control the free will of the people. Some people might choose to worship certain gods, and Aldrian would not know about it.

Even a system had its own limitations. At this moment, he still believed that Aldrian and his system would not find anything unusual about him even if Aldrian used his system to read his secret. He would appear to be a harmless person, as the information shown in Aldrian's system would be normal.

The system inside himself would hide any information that could make him suspicious, so he did not worry if Aldrian used his system on him.

If he spread the god's influence in this or other worlds slowly, Aldrian would not find anything about him even if Aldrian discovered people worshipping other gods.

Patriarch Elliot picked up his tea as he nodded. "Well, that's true," he said before taking a sip.

"The only thing we need to do is make sure our activities are not obvious and let our influence spread naturally. We can easily do that in this world because we contributed greatly to this world's conquest," Randolph said.

"Although many will think that Aldrian the Great is a major factor in the victory of the war in the Fallen Star Cluster as a whole, we can still control some of the narrative later in this world, which in the end will make people interested in our god," he added.

"Well, let's hope everything goes according to your plan," Patriarch Elliot said.

-----

An hour later, Aldrian was inside his tent in a meditative position. His focus remained on sensing more about the flow of faith in the world. At this moment, he finally reached the point where he could be confident about the direction of the faith energy. He took a deep breath.

"I hope that the place will be on my side of the world. If not, it will take longer to reach it," he thought.

He could sense the flow of the world's faith energy, but it was only a general direction. If the place was actually located on the northern side of the world, for example, then he would have to cross a large part of the world or even get close to the core of the planet.

If that underground place was located in the region below him, then he predicted he would need "only" two weeks to reach it.

Of course, he would not spend two weeks drilling underground in one go. He would create his domain when he took a rest, allowing him to return to the surface and return below whenever he wanted.

After confirming the direction of the faith energy, he created a hollow space deep underground, just large enough for his body, where his domain could still reach. After that, he teleported to that small space, and the moment he arrived, total darkness greeted his sight. He ignored the darkness and finally started to drill.

After he appeared, with still in a standing position, his body moved downward and kept moving at high speed as he dived deeper and deeper. His speed reached a kilometre per second, and his movement was smooth, as if he were moving through water. The solid soil beneath him opened naturally as if it were clearing a path for him.

He controlled the soil using earth laws, and he would have to use this method until he found the place he was looking for. With darkness as the only thing he could see and the rumbling sound of shifting earth surrounding him, the journey might have been boring, but for him that was fine.

He kept descending in the same position for the next few hours before he finally needed to rest to replenish his energy. Without wasting any time, he created his domain to create a point of teleportation.

After his energy replenished, he continued descending. He could sense that the faith energy became clearer the deeper he went. His movement also followed the direction of the faith energy.

As he moved deeper, he could also sense many energy stones, and all of them were at peak level. These energy stones were located in places untouched by anyone, which explained why there were so many of them and how they could develop into peak level undisturbed.

However, he ignored them and kept descending. He only stopped after another two hours because, at that time, he had to return to the surface. There was a party waiting, and as an important figure, he had to appear in it.

-----

On the surface, the night had already fallen. The sight of day and night in the south pole did not change much because of the sun's position, which never truly sank below the horizon. When night came, the sky only grew darker, but never to the point of total darkness.

At the basecamp, where a large but simple banquet had been arranged, many people had already gathered. All of them came from various races. Humans, spiritual beasts, dwarves, elves—here they showed a unity rarely seen in their home worlds. They looked amicable and conversed freely with one another as if there were no hidden intentions between them.

Their bond had formed over the past month as they battled together as comrades in arms, as a single team. The battles where they could have lost their lives created a strong connection, and the moments when they supported one another were engraved in their hearts.

At the banquet site, there was a platform where all of the high-ranking commanders stood on standby, waiting for the most important figure to take the stage.

A few moments later, the figure they had been waiting for finally appeared. Aldrian emerged from his tent, followed by Baek Jimin.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 897 - 897: Night Party

[ 1,587 words ]

Aldrian then stepped onto the platform, and once he stopped in the middle, he looked toward all the people who had placed their focus on him. He could see their respect, their reverence, and their pride toward him in their expressions.

There was only silence as they waited for him to say something. He did not make them wait long and opened his lips.

"To all the people here, my comrades in arms, my brothers and sisters in battle, my friends, and my big family, we have just created history for the future to write. The future will write all of you here as the heroes who liberated the worlds from the evil that encroached upon the land."

"History will always remember your contribution. With your spirit and strength, we were able to liberate this world from the devils. The devils who have already been encroaching upon this land for many generations have finally been driven out."

"It has been the dream of many people for a long time. I know some of you have been waiting for this moment, but we know that dream was not possible in the past. However, now, with all of you here, we have achieved that dream."

"But unfortunately, that dream had to be paid with the lives of some of our brothers and sisters. They were the greatest heroes among us, and we will always remember them. They will not be forgotten."

Behind him, Emperor Rozwald handed a glass of wine to Baek Jimin, and Baek Jimin gave it to Aldrian. He took the glass of wine and lifted it slightly into the air so all the people below could see it.

"To our fallen brothers and sisters, to the heroes who have already gone ahead of us, I present this glass of wine to them. Your spirit and sacrifice will always be engraved in our hearts." Aldrian then poured the wine onto the ground, and once the glass was empty, he handed it to Baek Jimin beside him.

Baek Jimin then gave him another glass of wine that had also been prepared by Emperor Rozwald. The other high-ranking commanders on the platform also had a glass of wine in their hands. The others below took a wooden tankard filled with wine that had been prepared beforehand. All of them held one without exception.

Aldrian then lifted the new glass of wine high.

"To all of you, the ones who still live to tell the tale, the great warriors who never took a step back, the heroes of the generations. For the bright future of all beings."

"For the bright future of all beings!" the others repeated Aldrian's words in unison until their voices echoed far and wide. After that, all of them drank the wine in one go.

"Enjoy your relaxing time, brothers and sisters. You deserve to earn it. There are still battles waiting for us in the future, but for now, you can forget that. Do not think about it and just party to your hearts' content for tonight."

"UWOOO!" The others shouted in reply to Aldrian's closing statement. Aldrian smiled as he looked at all of them showing their happy expressions. He then conversed with the commanders behind him while the troops below were already doing their own things.

A big feast from their stock of logistics had already been prepared by those who could cook. Many large barrels of wine were also spread across the banquet, and everyone could refill their wooden tankards as many times as they wanted. This was a special kind of wine that could even make someone at the pseudo immortal establishment stage drunk.

The people enthusiastically grabbed food and refilled their wooden tankards until they were drunk. The shouts of joy and sounds of happiness resounded across the banquet area. The happy atmosphere spread everywhere, allowing everyone to forget about the war for a moment.

Aldrian, who was still conversing with some of the troop commanders, looked toward Pope Claudius, who was speaking with Angelica. The pope, who seemed to sense Aldrian's gaze, looked in his direction and smiled before nodding.

Aldrian smiled and excused himself from the commanders' gathering, then approached Pope Claudius. Angelica, who saw Aldrian coming in her direction, could not help but flush and turn her gaze away.

Pope Claudius glanced at his daughter's reaction and could not help his smile from growing wider.

"Your Holiness, Angelica," he said after he arrived near them.

"Your Majesty," Pope Claudius said, returning the greeting. His smile was truly bright at this moment as he looked at Aldrian. He had already heard about what happened between Aldrian and Angelica after noticing the change in Angelica over the past few weeks. She could be seen blushing more than usual, as if she were imagining something and feeling shy about it herself.

His curiosity eventually led him to ask her about it. She finally told him what had happened between her and Aldrian after he kept pushing her gently.

After hearing it, his heart could not help but feel full of butterflies and sunshine. Looking at her shy but happy expression already gave him satisfaction and happiness. He had never seen his daughter that shy and that happy at the same time, and he truly felt grateful to Aldrian for giving Angelica a chance and accepting her.

"Your Majesty," Angelica returned the greeting softly. She slightly lowered her head to hide her blushing face from Aldrian.

Aldrian, seeing her like that, could not help wanting to tease her. She was so adorable in his eyes that it made him want to hug her tightly and bring her anywhere.

He then took her hand, which made her widen her eyes and look at Aldrian's face. He smiled at her before looking at Pope Claudius.

"My apologies, Your Holiness, but may I borrow Angelica for a moment?"

Pope Claudius, who was also stunned when Aldrian suddenly grabbed Angelica's hand, instantly nodded repeatedly with a wide smile on his face.

"Of course, Your Majesty. You may bring Angelica anywhere. Younglings should mingle with each other. Even if Your Majesty wishes to bring Angelica far away and not come back, I do not mind."

"Father!" Angelica shouted in shyness, which made Pope Claudius burst into laughter. Angelica grew even shyer, and Aldrian could only smile at the pope's teasing.

"Then please excuse me," he said before he pulled Angelica's hand so she would follow him. Angelica, with her blushing face, could only follow Aldrian as he "dragged" her to meet some people.

Baek Jimin was at this moment conversing with her mother and a few elders of the Thorny Flower Garden.

There was also an unexpected person mingling among them, and that was Queen Revania. The queen managed to mix herself in with the Thorny Flower Garden's elders and converse with them about various matters. She also spoke with Sect Master Baek, and with her social skills, she appeared quite close to them.

Sect Master Baek and Angelica, who were standing side by side, turned their attention toward Aldrian, who was holding Angelica's hand while speaking with some of the commanders.

Sect Master Baek could not help but smile as she glanced at her daughter.

"It looks like you will have another sister," she said.

Baek Jimin smiled and then shrugged. "Well, I cannot help it. He truly attracts many women, and as for Angelica, she is worth it. With everything that happened between her and Aldrian, there is no way she would not fall for him. I support her, and I think Sister Sylphia feels the same. More importantly, Aldrian accepted her, so I will just support him."

Sect Master Baek nodded. "Well, that is true. But I think you should also accompany him right now. With him holding Angelica's hand while you are here, it could spark some bad gossip between you two. Do not let anyone's imagination run wild."

Baek Jimin thought for a moment before nodding. "Well, that is true. Then, excuse me, Mother." She said that before approaching Aldrian.

Sect Master Baek looked at her daughter who approached Aldrian, and when she arrived near him, Aldrian instantly grabbed her hand as well. He continued his conversation with people like Emperor Rozwald and a few leaders from various races.

The people who saw Aldrian surrounded by beauties felt that this was one aspect showing that Aldrian was still a normal person. Behind all of his absurdness and mysteriousness, there was still one thing that made him appear like an ordinary human.

He still had "mortal characteristics", such as liking to be surrounded by beauties. He was already known to have a harem of two women, both of them beautiful, but this was the first time they had seen him appear intimate with another woman besides those two.

It was as if he wanted to introduce his new woman to the others.

Unconsciously, in that moment, many people began to embed in their minds that Aldrian was a man who liked to gather beauties. He might gather many beautiful women into his harem in the future.

A man as great as him would naturally attract many women, and it was only normal if he had a large harem someday. He was young, very handsome, strong, and held a high status. There was nothing he lacked.

Queen Revania, who was still mingling with the elders of the Thorny Flower Garden, also looked in Aldrian's direction. Her gaze seemed to show that she was thinking about something.

After a few moments, she smiled and continued her conversation with the others.

'Well, I do not mind a long process. Let me keep doing what I am doing. I believe that someday I will at least be able to touch his heart,' she thought.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 898 - 898: The Beginning of the Worlds

[ 1,537 words ]

Two weeks later, the alliance force group led by Aldrian had already finished building their temporary structures inside the city. The city was completely cleared of debris, rubble, and any signs of the battle. The land looked like a clean sheet for the future, a place where they could rebuild a new city.

For the past week, there had not been much for the alliance force to do except continue making the world a better place to live. They erased any traces of the devils, and there were also groups patrolling far from the city to check whether any remnants of the devils remained.

There were also cultivators who had already begun cultivating trees in the city. The elves, who loved greenery, tried planting various trees throughout the area. Because of that, the previous sight of a barren land was gone. Trees had finally begun to grow in this world after generations without any greenery.

Normally, at this time, it would still be impossible for them to grow even a single tree in the city. The amount of negative energy would have killed any crops, and the purification formation would still need time to purify the air to the level where plants could grow.

However, something amazing happened before everyone's eyes. The city's negative energy quickly reduced to the same level as any ordinary place in their home world. The

air felt refreshing and the soil started to become fertile. It was as if an invisible force was giving life and driving away the excessive negative energy.

Moreover, the effect reached all the way into the sky. The sky became clear, without the red mist that once covered it, and the clouds returned to their normal color, white like snow.

The absurd thing was that all of this happened only a few days after they conquered the city. For many people, this was similar to what had happened at the headquarters of the devils. For others who did not know the details, it made them question what had truly happened. They knew this was not the work of the purification formation because the effect was far too great for just a formation.

As the conversations grew, many began to realize that this strange phenomenon might be Aldrian the Great's doing. This was because the troops who had followed him for weeks said that this only happened when they were with Aldrian the Great.

They did not know what Aldrian the Great had done, but whatever it was, he was truly amazing. They could do their daily activities inside the city without any disturbance.

While everyone went about their own tasks, Aldrian continued his journey, descending deeper underground.

He had already entered the area surrounded by magma a week ago. His surroundings were no longer dark, but instead filled with the glowing light of the magma. He protected his body using his golden energy, because without it, he would have melted instantly. In this area, even someone at the pseudo immortal stage would melt if they did not protect themselves.

He could not lose focus here, and he had to keep his energy active to protect his body. He needed to calculate precisely when his energy would be depleted and stop to replenish it.

As he continued to descend, he could also sense the flow of faith energy much more clearly. He felt himself getting closer to the place where the faith gathered, which made him glad because the best possibility he had considered might actually happen this time.

He did not have to descend past the planet's core to reach that place.

After another hour of descending, he finally sensed a large space far below him. It felt as though there was a massive hall in the middle of this region filled with magma.

After another minute of descending, he finally arrived in the large space. He saw magma flowing like waterfalls. The entire area was surrounded by magma, and there

was a small island in the middle, encircled by a sea of molten rock. The island was the only place that was not touched by the magma.

Aldrian floated for a moment to observe the terrain around him before flying toward the island. The faith energy gathered throughout this vast space, but he could sense that its center was on the island.

Once he reached the island, he landed beside a large boulder that appeared completely ordinary. It did not look special at all.

But he knew that this boulder must be special for it to form naturally here, especially with faith energy gathering around it. In the other worlds that had already become his domain, there were boulders like this as well.

Their locations were also more or less the same, usually near the core of the planet. From his estimation, if he sank deeper for another hour, he would already reach the planet's core.

Aldrian observed the boulder for a moment as he wondered about the history behind places like this. Why did these worlds have such locations? Why was there a strange giant boulder near the planet's core where the faith of the world gathered?

Now that he actually stood in this place, questions like these surfaced in his mind and made him want to know more about it.

He then used the system to look at the information of the boulder.

-----

The Rock of the Beginning.

Description: This rock is what the world looked like at the beginning of time. As time passed, the world that everyone knows finally took shape through the natural order, with each material of the universe colliding and merging, this rock remained as the point of its origin. It is the point that represents the beginning of the world's birth.

-----

Aldrian nodded in understanding. The rock actually existed from after the beginning of time, a rock that was essentially born from nothing. But then, to be fair, all earth-element materials that shaped the worlds across the cosmos also came from nothing, since their material emerged from nothingness before the beginning of time.

He tried to touch it. At first, he kept his hand coated in energy, then he tried without it. The moment his energy faded from his hand, he realized he did not feel any heat from the surrounding magma.

He raised his eyebrows and moved his hand around, sensing that he still did not feel any heat. He decided to retract his protective barrier completely, and he still did not sense any heat. It was as if there was a natural barrier preventing the heat from reaching this place.

There were truly many things he needed to study here.

Although he had examples from the Ancient Blue Gate World and the Akares Star, this was the first time he visited and properly examined this place at such a close range. Since he had the chance, he thought he might as well study more about the place and the Rock of the Beginning.

But first, he would make this entire world his domain. He closed his eyes and began the process of creating a domain, and it did not take long. In less than four seconds, he successfully built his domain, and he instantly felt a refreshing sensation. Then, for a brief moment, he suddenly saw a vision.

A vision appeared, which he believed to be the world's past. Inside the vision, he saw the rock floating in the vast space. As time passed, the rock collided with another rock, then collided with another, and then another. It kept repeating, collision after collision, until the world finally took shape.

That rock was the "winner," for it was not destroyed or "consumed" by the other rocks. It managed to keep most of its shape just as it had been after the beginning of time.

After that, the vision stopped, and Aldrian opened his eyes. He looked at the rock for a moment and patted it a few times. This rock was the winner of countless collisions and managed to retain most of its form after the creation of existence. It was truly primordial material, only slightly changed in shape and still holding its pure content.

He decided to sit in meditation and began cultivating his comprehension. Although he already had deep comprehension of many laws from his past followers, there were still many things that could be learned and comprehended from nature itself. Especially from something as pure as the rock in front of him, which had barely been touched or influenced by anything.

Comprehension was limitless, and his own understanding would continue to grow and become more profound if he could comprehend things by himself. True and profound comprehension could only be achieved through one's own insight. The comprehension gained from others only acted as support, not as the main foundation.

That was why he continued to cultivate his own comprehension, even though he had already received the comprehension of many of his past followers.

-----

Three days later, Aldrian finished his cultivation and decided to return to the surface. Many groups from other powers of the Ancient Blue Gate World had already arrived at the basecamp.

From the Dragon King, the Phoenix Queen, and others who had fought on different sides of the world, they came with their small groups.

They were not here merely to converse casually, they had also come to discuss the next plan for the war.

Their war was still not over.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 899 - 899: Returning to Its Ancient Name

[ 1,563 words ]

Aldrian was inside the large hall within one of the biggest wooden buildings in the city. He was with all the leaders of the forces attacking Red Mist Star. All of them were seated around a long table, and Aldrian sat at the center.

Baek Jimin and Angelica were seated slightly behind him, with Xin Haotian standing not far from them. There were also cultivators acting as protectors standing at the sides, such as Arthur, who served as Angelica's protector.

"Thank you for coming, ladies and gentlemen. I know that it has not been long since we finished our war in this world, and we are still in the euphoria of our victory. But our war is still not entirely finished. We still have a war waiting for us before we can finally liberate the fallen star cluster and ensure that this star cluster no longer carries the name 'fallen'," Aldrian said as his gaze swept across everyone present.

The people looked solemnly in Aldrian's direction, giving him their full attention.

"Now, we know that there are only three worlds remaining, and from the rough plan we already decided, we will attack the furthest world from Red Mist Star, which is Aberon. My strategy is that we will strike them with everything we have right now. We will leave Red Mist Star and let it empty for some time," Aldrian continued.

Hearing that, one of the figures suddenly raised his hand, and Aldrian looked toward him. It was the leader of the dwarves from the Orian continent, the king of the dwarven kingdom, King Gandor Averich. Aldrian nodded as a sign allowing the king to speak.

"My apologies, Your Majesty, but isn't that too dangerous? If we leave this world vacant, we will leave it vulnerable even for some time. We are afraid that there may still be devils alive and hiding at this moment. If we leave, what if they do something while all of us are gone?"

Aldrian nodded in understanding. The king's worry was not wrong, and it was something worth paying attention to. He knew that many others here also had the same concern, and that was normal.

However, that concern was not a problem, or rather, it was no longer a problem, because he had already made this entire world his domain. What had he done for the past three days besides cultivating his comprehension?

He had swept away any surviving devils scattered across the world who had chosen to hide. Just like what happened in Ancient Blue Gate World, he had killed all of the devils in this world. As of this moment, this world was entirely free from devils.

"I understand your concern, Your Majesty King Gandor, and what I can say is this, as of this moment, I guarantee you that no devils remain in this world. How could I know that? Let's just say that I have an ability to detect the presence of devils, and I can sense them across the entire world."

Hearing that, the people there felt a tremor in their hearts. Aldrian could sense devils throughout the entire world?

But then again, if he could do something as incredible as unleashing a technique that covered the entire world like those countless swords, then he might indeed have the ability to detect devils across the world.

If Aldrian confidently said that there were no devils left in this world, then they believed him. As far as they knew, everything had worked according to plan in this war, and Aldrian seemed to never be wrong in his plans or decisions.

If he already decided to do something, then he must have already thought about the good and the bad of it. If he decided to attack with their entire force, then they would obey.

Seeing that the people accepted his answer, Aldrian inwardly smiled. He felt grateful that they had this much faith in him. Thinking that there were no further questions, he continued.

"Because Aberon is smaller in size than Red Mist Star, each of our battle groups' distances will be much closer to each other. This will make it easier for us to support one another. In the end, the time needed to conquer this world will be much shorter. Moreover, the other forces from the other worlds will unite with us, increasing our numbers and power."

"If we can conquer Aberon as quickly as possible, then we can support the other forces striking the remaining two worlds. We could end this war in no more than two months."

The others nodded. Aldrian then revealed a giant map of Aberon, engraved on a giant scroll, and spread it across the table so everyone could see it. The map contained general information about Aberon, as well as the locations of all the cities, towns, and strongholds of the devils.

The information on the map was, of course, provided by Xarz, who at this moment was still inside his cell within Aldrian's interstellar vessel.

"We will unite with the forces from Arantes Star, and we will take advantage of our numbers and greater power..." He then began explaining the details of the invasion plan. He divided the various forces into battle groups and described how they would attack Aberon from many sides at the same time, just as they had attacked Red Mist Star.

He and the others continued discussing the attack plan for another two hours before all of them agreed that there were no problems and no doubts left in their hearts. The only thing remaining was for them to depart and go to war.

"Alright, we will depart next week. We need to give the other forces in other worlds time to rest. Some of them conquered their world's targets much later compared to the others. I also need to coordinate with them."

The others nodded, but then Emperor Rozwald suddenly smiled and said to him,

"Your Majesty, I suddenly have something in my mind that I would like to say to you. Well, it is more like a suggestion."

Aldrian wondered what it was and smiled. "Please tell me, Emperor Rozwald."

"As we know, this world is called Red Mist Star, replacing its old name because the devils conquered this world, which in the end changed the environment of this world. However, at this moment, I don't think Red Mist Star is an appropriate name anymore with the changes in the world over the past few days."

The others who heard it agreed and understood what Emperor Rozwald meant.

For the past two days, they had seen the rapid change in the world's atmosphere with the excessive negative energy disappearing at a quick pace.

At this time, most of the world's atmosphere had already returned to normal. The sky had turned clear without the red mist, and the air was no longer suffocating. The negative energy had returned to a normal balance with the other energies, and the soil had begun recovering its life.

The change in the world truly shocked many people to the core. They did not know what had really happened, and once again, they simply thought of it as Aldrian's miracle. That was because everywhere he was, there always seemed to be a miracle. Many things outside of their understanding happened whenever they were near Aldrian.

"That's why, Your Majesty, we should call this world something else. Maybe we could start calling it by its old name, or perhaps Your Majesty has something else in mind? Well, this is only my suggestion, Your Majesty, and you may ignore it," Emperor Rozwald said.

Aldrian nodded. "I see. I also think it is a good idea to start calling this world by another name. This is also to erase any trace of the devils for good. Well, I don't think it will be good to give it a completely new name, so let's use its ancient name. That name is part of this world's good history, and we should preserve it."

Emperor Rozwald nodded. "If Your Majesty says so, then from this moment on, we will call this world by its ancient name, Green Haven World."

The Green Haven World was the name of this world before the devils occupied it. From ancient records, it was said that this world was a beautiful place filled with greenery. Because sixty percent of the world's surface was land, the world would appear green when seen from space. It was a world that truly fit the name Green Haven.

Aldrian nodded with a smile. "Alright, then all is settled. You may dismiss and prepare for our departure next week," he said before the people began to disperse. As they left the hall, they continued talking about the meeting outside.

They did not immediately return to their main forces spread across the world. They also wanted to speak with each other regarding other matters.

Some time later, Aldrian was also pulled into conversation by the others. They had many things to discuss after all.

All of them stayed for the night before finally returning to their own base camps. They had to begin managing their troops for the next war in a different world. The next war might be easier or harder, because the next world was the last bastion of the devils in this star cluster.

-----  
Time quickly passed, and a week had already gone by. The troops across Green Haven had finished their preparations for departure today.

They were about to enter the war that would end the devils' occupation of the fallen star cluster once and for all!

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.

## Chapter 900 - 900: Confusion

[ 1,506 words ]

Aldrian and all the forces of the Ancient Blue Gate World departed from Green Haven, and they were already being waited for by Arantes Star's forces in the space near Green Haven. The Arantes forces were much fewer this time because they had to leave many of their troops to guard their conquered world.

However, the ones heading to attack the next world still consisted of many members of their main force, including powerful cultivators such as the leaders of great sects and families. The famous individuals such as the Sword Maiden and her master were also present.

Their united force together with the Ancient Blue Gate World's numbers reached ten million troops in total. After uniting their forces outside Green Haven's space, they departed toward Aberon.

For a week they spent their time in the wormhole, and nothing much happened. They reached the space near Aberon without much trouble.

The moment they emerged from the wormhole, they finally saw the world that was much smaller than Green Haven.

This world consisted of sixty percent water and a reddish atmosphere, although not as thick as the Red Mist Star in the past. There was no mist covering the entire world, but in some parts there were areas that appeared blackish or greyish from space.

Those areas were dangerous places where deadly poison filled the air, and volcanic regions where volcanoes erupted every week. This world was filled with more dangerous terrains and regions compared to Green Haven despite its smaller size.

The alliance forces kept approaching the world until they were quite close to the atmosphere, and all of them spread out to take their positions surrounding the world according to the plan. The troops disembarked from the interstellar vessels, followed by numerous cruisers that brought troops below the Emperor stage.

Aldrian and the forces from the Orian Continent observed the surface of the world for a moment before Aldrian finally made a move.

Just like when he first attacked the Red Mist Star, he did the same thing again at this moment. He created many large rocks in space before burning them and letting them fall toward the world.

He targeted the region that he believed to be the city serving as their headquarters, the place where the strongest devils might have gathered to manage their troops.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Explosions and shockwaves shook the region as many people watched from space. Clouds were swept away by the impact, and dust rose into the atmosphere, hindering the troops' visibility of the region. Although this was the second time they had witnessed it, they still felt amazed by its power and scale. Waves of flame spread across the region and engulfed everything in their path.

"Attack." Aldrian finally gave his order, and all of the troops began to descend toward the world.

The alliance forces across the space descended toward the world at the same time.

Aldrian also descended, following his troops who excitedly rushed down even faster. As he kept approaching the surface, the dust caused by the impacts began to clear slowly. But then he narrowed his eyes as he drew closer. He sensed something strange.

After he nearly reached the large city that was one of his targets in this region, he finally saw the scenery below as cultivators helped disperse the dust. Once everyone gained a clear view of what had happened on the surface, they were stunned and then confused.

The city was utterly obliterated. The meteors had struck the city's ground directly, wiping it out in one sweep and leaving several massive craters behind. This caused many troops to feel confused because from the scene, it looked as if the devils had not raised any defense at all. They had allowed the meteors to fall into their city without any resistance.

They also did not detect any movement from the devils. The place was completely deserted, as if all the devils had died in the meteor strike.

Aldrian spread his spiritual sense to the maximum, yet he found nothing, not even the slightest movement of a small creature or anything hiding underground. He created his domain, and even when he spread his domain sense, he still did not detect anything unusual.

The alliance forces then spread in all directions to search for any sign of the devils.

However, after they kept searching for more than half an hour, they still did not find anything. The city and its surrounding area did not show any sign of life at all.

"We did not find any devils twenty thousand kilometres south," Emperor Rozwald said to Aldrian after returning from checking the region.

"Same from the north. We did not find anyone or anything. It is as if all the devils just vanished into the air," Queen Revania said.

The other leaders reported the same situation, which made Aldrian touch his chin as he pondered over it. He then received additional reports from other forces across the world, all stating that they also found no devils. The cities, the towns, and all of their strongholds were deserted without a single living being.

But they reported many signs showing that the devils had escaped with some of their belongings. There were traces indicating they had fled in a rush, leaving many places in disarray. There was almost nothing valuable left anywhere, as if the devils had made sure not to leave anything behind.

'Did all of them escape somewhere, or are they planning something?' Aldrian thought as he considered the situation. He knew that with the same situation happening across the world, this was a deliberate and coordinated action. All of the devils had abandoned their strategic cities and strongholds along with every valuable item so the alliance forces could not take advantage of them.

"Well, whatever the case, let's build our basecamp first. After that, we will spread much further to check whether this condition also happened in the places our forces have not yet reached. The devils might be hiding somewhere in this world," Aldrian said to the others.

"Yes, Your Majesty," they replied in unison.

Without waiting any further, all of them began doing their own tasks, and Aldrian continued to stay in contact with the other forces across the world. He also tried to communicate with the forces in other worlds, wondering whether they were experiencing the same situation.

A few hours passed, and the basecamp was already built. Battle groups began to spread in many directions. They wanted to see if there were any signs of the devils in other places.

Time passed, and another week went by. However, they still did not find any sign of the devils. All places remained empty without any living beings. Aldrian also received information from the forces in other worlds that they were facing a similar situation. They, too, found no devils.

But during this time, the alliance forces were not without any findings. They discovered clues about the devils' movements.

As they spread out, they noted that not a single interstellar vessel remained in the special areas where such vessels were usually parked near the cities or major strongholds. From this clue, they concluded that the devils might have used them to escape somewhere into outer space.

If that was the case, then they could not pursue them because they did not know where the devils had gone. But it was also a surprising move by the devils, because everyone thought they would fight to the death in this world.

Since this world had become the last bastion of the devils in the Fallen Star Cluster, they were expected to defend it if they did not want to lose their foothold in this cluster. This star cluster was strategic because it was close to the central star cluster, allowing them to maintain a base if they wanted to attack the central region in the future.

Leaving this world like cowards without putting up even a little resistance did not match the devils' usual character. Aldrian had already asked Xarz about their movement, but Xarz said he did not know. Although he was the leader of the devil troops in the Fallen Star Cluster, he did not always know what kind of strategy the other devils were executing.

Xarz was also quite surprised when he heard about the situation of the world, and he agreed that it was strange. He explained that those devils must know that even if they escaped somewhere, the Vampire King might hunt them down because they had abandoned their posts. That was considered treason and punishable by death, and an unpleasant death at that.

Aldrian sensed that Xarz was genuinely confused, which made him even more certain that the devils on this world were planning something. The question was: what was their plan? And where had all of them gone?

Another week passed, and Aldrian gathered with the leaders of the other powers to discuss the matter.

"Your Majesty, the situation of this world is strange, and I think we need to remain wary until we know what the devils planned or where they went. If we relax ourselves, I am afraid we will be caught off guard if the devils are planning something," Emperor Rozwald said.

Share to your friends

Tip: You can use left, right keyboard keys to browse between chapters.